

92 5 13a

Keep Your Card in This Pocket

Books will be issued only on presentation of proper library cards.

Unless labeled otherwise, books may be retained for two weeks. Borrowers finding books marked, defaced or mutilated are expected to report same at library desk; otherwise the last borrower will be held responsible for all imperfections discovered.

The card holder is responsible for all books drawn on this card.

Penalty for over-due books 2c a day plus cost of notices.

Lost cards and change of residence must be reported promptly.



Public Library

Kansas City, Mo.

Keep Your Card in This Pocket

BERKOWITZ ENVELOPE CO., K. C., MO.

118 00120 3188

FEB 14 '42

MAY 23 '42

JAN 21 '42

DEC 2 1967

East

EAST BRANCH

MAR 30 1977

MAY JAN 4 1979

APR 5 1989

Early Life and Letters
of
Gen. Thomas J. (*Stonewall*) Jackson



T. J. Jackson

"You may be whatever you resolve to be."

Early Life and Letters
of
General Thomas J. Jackson
"Stonewall" Jackson

By
His Nephew
THOMAS JACKSON ARNOLD

ILLUSTRATED



NEW YORK CHICAGO TORONTO
Fleming H. Revell Company
LONDON AND EDINBURGH

Copyright, 1965, by
FLEMING H. REVELL COMPANY

New York: 158 Fifth Avenue
Chicago: 17 North Wabash Ave.
Toronto: 25 Richmond Street, W.
London: 21 Paternoster Square
Edinburgh: 100 Princes Street

To
my Wife and Daughter,
Eugenia Hill Arnold,
and
Isabel Arnold

Preface

THERE is no pretension to literary style in the following pages. The writer has devoted his entire attention to the collection and presentation of facts, and these have been sifted with scrupulous care, and whenever doubt as to accuracy existed, have been unhesitatingly rejected, there being neither desire nor necessity for drawing upon the imagination. No character has appeared upon the world's stage within the past half century of whom so much has been written as of "Stonewall" Jackson. With as many as twenty biographies issued from the press in this time, aside from an innumerable quantity of magazine and other articles, it would seem that the subject had been more than exhausted, and that there was little room for another biography. But careful scrutiny of what has been written, and much of this singularly inaccurate, discloses little information as to a considerable period in the history of General Jackson.

The object of the present volume is to reveal something of the less known part of his life, and to preserve in a permanent form such facts as might be of interest to the admirers of "Stonewall" Jackson.

T. J. A.

Arnold Hill, W. Va.

Contents

	INTRODUCTION	13
I.	YOUTH	24
II.	ANCESTRY	38
III.	WEST POINT	52
IV.	WEST POINT (<i>Continued</i>)	61
V.	MEXICO	77
VI.	MEXICO (<i>Continued</i>)	93
VII.	MEXICO (<i>Continued</i>)	113
VIII.	MEXICO (<i>Continued</i>)	124
IX.	GOVERNOR'S ISLAND	140
X.	FORT HAMILTON	153
XI.	FORT MEADE	166
XII.	VIRGINIA MILITARY INSTITUTE	178
XIII.	VIRGINIA MILITARY INSTITUTE (<i>Continued</i>)	190
XIV.	HOME LIFE	199
XV.	HOME LIFE (<i>Continued</i>)	214
XVI.	LEXINGTON, VA.	228
XVII.	EUROPE	246
XVIII.	HOME LIFE	254
XIX.	HOME LIFE (<i>Continued</i>)	270
XX.	HOME LIFE (<i>Continued</i>)	284
XXI.	HOME LIFE (<i>Continued</i>)	298

XXII.	IMPRESSIONS	309
XXIII.	IMPRESSIONS (<i>Continued</i>)	324
XXIV.	CIVIL WAR	331
XXV.	IMPRESSIONS—DEATH	342
	INDEX	369

ILLUSTRATIONS

	FACING PAGE
General Thomas J. Jackson	<i>Title</i>
Cottage in Which General Jackson Was Born— Miniature of His Father	26
Fac-simile of Receipt Given by Young Jackson as Constable	36
Residence and Mill of Cummins E. Jackson	50
West Point and East Shore of Hudson River . . .	62
Major Jackson at New Orleans En Route from Mexico—Artillery Sabre Carried by Jackson in the Campaign in Mexico; and One of His Spurs and Ink-well—Young Jackson in the City of Mexico, Age 23	140
Virginia Military Institute, Lexington	186
Miss Eleanor Junkin, Jackson's First Wife . . .	204
Jackson the Professor—At the Virginia Military Institute	228
Mrs. Mary Anna (Morrison) Jackson, About 1880	256
Specimens of General Jackson's Handwriting . .	294
General Jackson at Winchester, Va., in 1862 . .	340
Julia, Daughter of "Stonewall" Jackson, as a Child, and When Grown	360

Introduction

FROM my earliest childhood my memory is very clear as to the personal appearance of General Jackson, and from that time forward I knew him quite well, as a boy would know a man. Whilst an army officer, afterwards as professor at the Virginia Military Institute, it was General Jackson's custom, as far as practicable, to spend his vacations with my parents, at their home, in the town of Beverley (West) Virginia. Later I was a member of General Jackson's family in Lexington, Virginia, for almost a year, where I was associated with him more or less daily, always at the same table, and frequently accompanying him in his walks. In later years I knew intimately some of General Jackson's boyhood companions, a number of them relatives, from whom I gathered much interesting information. In addition there has recently come into my possession more than one hundred letters of General Jackson's private correspondence, of a most intimate nature, written to my mother, who was his only sister, and, with himself, were the sole surviving members of their family. General Jackson, being the elder, felt a fatherly, as well as a brotherly interest in this sister, as is clearly evidenced throughout the entire correspondence.

The writing of these memoirs is not the inspi-

ration of a moment. To the conscientious narrator, who feels that a word should not be written, nor a line of correspondence quoted, that would meet with the serious disapproval of the subject of the sketch, could it be brought to his knowledge, the task is not an easy one. I have conscientiously endeavored to keep within the lines indicated. The period of General Jackson's life embraced in that part of the Civil War in which he participated has been so fully covered by other writers, and particularly by the distinguished military critic and strategist Lt. Colonel G. F. R. Henderson of the British Army, in his "Stonewall Jackson," that anything that might now be written would be superfluous, and fall short of what has been so ably portrayed: so that an account of this period of his career has not been attempted, other than the occasional introduction of some incidental matters, a number of them hitherto unpublished. General Jackson believed in system, method and discipline in every phase of life. He not only practised them himself, but looked for them in others, regarding them as essential attributes towards obtaining the most out of life, utilizing the unit to produce the greatest result. He certainly regarded methodical habits as indispensable to the highest form of usefulness to others. In a sense, according to his creed, certainly in later life, man was a machine with intelligence, one of God's instruments, and lived as such: and in his own brief span of thirty-nine years, at least after attaining his majority, he lived a full man's life, weighing as it were

the possibilities of each hour, and giving to his work his utmost intelligence. He was intensely ambitious. This is clearly apparent throughout his entire course at West Point, and also in the campaign in Mexico. In fact, in the latter, he recognizes as a punishment from God, for his "excessive ambition" an order severing him (fortunately for him but temporarily) from the advancing army. That he started out in life with the determination to distinguish himself, and to add lustre to his family name, there cannot be a doubt. To what height he aspired is only matter of conjecture, as he was not given to speaking of the successful results of his efforts, and certainly never as to his aspirations: that the latter were very high up on the ladder of fame, even without limit, may be readily imagined. This was personal ambition. Later in life there was a marked change. The same steady, determined desire to succeed, but not for self: the controlling idea was to press to the very utmost limit the work of the Master—self was completely subordinated. Every thought and act was under the constant guidance and direction of the Maker, and all for His glory *only*. An interesting revelation gleaned from this correspondence is the seemingly intuitive perception, or clear discernment, with which General Jackson, as early as the year 1855, penetrated future political events, and foresaw not only a coming effort at separation of the states, but evidently it was manifest to his mind that such separation would be accompanied by strife.¹

¹ See letters of date Oct. 6, 1855, p. 232; and June 6, 1856, page 244.,

So expectant was he of this that he stated in his letters his unwillingness to invest more than a limited part of his money in a contemplated purchase of public lands, in any of the free states, for fear that he might lose the property so acquired by confiscation. Further, the expression in his letters leaves no uncertain conjecture as to where he expected to stand when such a crisis should arrive. Not only is his position made manifest in this way, but in another letter of near the same date, wherein he makes known his purpose to aid a younger half brother in an investment in lands, he strenuously objects to the latter locating in a free state, for the reason that should war come, the young man would by such residence in all probability be found on the side of the "abolitionists : while we would be on the opposite side."

Of those who did not know General Jackson, some have classed him as a fanatic, some as a bigot, some as an enthusiast, and still others as a fatalist. Those who knew him best did not so estimate him. He was entirely free from bigotry, being the last person to believe that no one could enter the kingdom of heaven except by the particular path that he had selected. He did not have prejudice or irrational partiality for a particular creed. In Mexico he consulted with the highest Catholic dignitaries, to gather all the information attainable about the doctrines and teachings of that church, being himself entirely open to conviction. After his return from Mexico he investigated the doctrines of the Episcopal

church far enough to be satisfied, and was baptized therein. The probability is that he would have been confirmed in that church had he not been ordered to Fort Meade, Florida, where he had no opportunity of doing so. From Fort Meade he went to Lexington, and upon further investigation, including the study of the Shorter Catechism, and discussions with able and intelligent men, particularly John B. Lyle, with whom he had formed a close friendship, and his former friend Major D. H. Hill, he united with the Presbyterian church. That he regarded all denominations as working together for God's glory is verified abundantly. In support of this view it is only necessary to allude to the fact that later in the Civil War he made special effort and succeeded in procuring the services of a Catholic priest for chaplain of one of his brigades that was composed principally of persons of that faith.¹

The reader will bear in mind that this occurred more than fifty years ago. At this late day we unfortunately too frequently find the want of such liberality in those engaged in the work of the Master. He was not a fanatic, for he did not have hatred for those opposed to him. The fanatic is not only the bigot, but he seeks to compel all who differ with him to travel his path. General Jackson was incapable

¹The late Dr. Hunter McGuire stated that on one occasion Jackson issued an order directing that all tents be left. Whereupon a chaplain, a Catholic priest, tendered his resignation, assigning as a reason that without the privacy of a tent he could not perform his clerical duties. Jackson, upon inquiry, permitted the one exception. The priest remained, being the only person in the command having a tent on the march.

of persecuting his fellow-man for entertaining opinions at variance with his own religious views. He was not an enthusiast, for that is a form of fanaticism. His helpful friendship was extended to all denominations in their efforts to advance the Creator's cause.

I have time and again seen him in attendance at services of other denominations than his own. For those who were not religious he had only kind feeling and sympathy. Being sincere himself he respected their sincerity. He could pray for them, and strive to lead a life that would be an example, and offer advice when seemly or sought. It would have been utterly incompatible with his temperament to persecute them. Such a thought would have been abhorrent to his whole nature. He was not a fatalist. "Fatalism tends to apathy, to absolute inaction." "His belief was in the Providence of the Scriptures, to intelligent and hopeful effort. It does not overthrow but rather establishes the agency of second causes ; for it teaches that God's method and rule of effectuating events only through them is as steadfast as His purposes to carry out His decree. Hence this faith produces a combination of courageous serenity, with cheerful diligence in the use of means. Jackson was as laborious as he was trustful, and laborious precisely because he was trustful. Everything that preparation, care, forecast, and self-sacrificing toil could do to prepare and earn success he did. His belief in the superintendence of God was equal to his industry." ¹ General Jackson was simply

¹Dabney.

a very earnest Christian, he was deeply consecrated, his whole soul was in his belief. He lived his religion every hour of the day. He certainly believed it to be the one and only object overshadowing all else.

He accepted the Scriptures and Divine injunctions as true. Having done this, the laws of God were to him as the commands of a superior officer, with this difference, that a disregard of the latter meant punishment and disgrace in this life only, while a disregard of the former meant to him eternal punishment. His own expression in a few concise words, in a letter written as early as the year 1850, when he was but twenty-six years of age, gives a clearer comprehension of General Jackson's religion than anything that has ever been written. "Rather than wilfully violate the known will of God, I would forfeit my life. It may seem strange to you, yet nevertheless such a resolution I have taken, and I will by it abide."¹ Many have sacrificed their lives rather than renounce their religious convictions. Jackson would have sacrificed his life rather than have wilfully violated any one of God's commandments. No one who knew General Jackson will for a moment question that he meant literally what he wrote in the above quotation. It was the expression of a carefully considered opinion on the part of a very serious, sincere and earnest man. If he ever made a careless statement, it is not within my knowledge. And yet, notwithstanding all this seriousness, he was not without a sense of humor, and this occa-

¹ Letter of date March 8, 1850, p. 159.

sionally overflows in his letters, and one in reading can imagine the hearty laughter. Mrs. Preston, his sister-in-law, relates having seen him so convulsed as to almost fall from his chair. Jackson was a man of sound and excellent judgment. I never knew or heard of his making a mistake in a business venture. He was a good judge of men. He has been criticized more or less for some of his staff selections. Among others, of a Doctor of Divinity for his Chief of Staff. Yet it would have been difficult to have made a wiser selection. Aside from Dr. Dabney's practical, clear judgment and discretion, he was a close observer and excellent interpreter of human nature; he possessed untiring energy and industry. There was probably not a man in Jackson's army who had as accurate knowledge of the topography of the country, of the roads and streams in every section of that part of Virginia in which Jackson's military operations were conducted, as did Dr. Dabney. Such knowledge was invaluable to Jackson. One of General Jackson's friends, a former cadet, in a conversation with him, on one occasion inquired how he happened to appoint—— to an important position when he was so unpopular. Jackson's reply was: "As he has no friends, he will be impartial in his reports."¹

While a professor at Lexington, General Jackson thought seriously at times of entering the ministry. He wrote his aunt, Mrs. Neale, to the effect that the

¹ Related by Col. J. D. H. Ross of Lexington, Va., to whom Jackson made the reply.

subject of becoming a herald of the cross had often seriously engaged his attention. That he regarded it as the most noble of all professions, and that he would not be surprised were he to die upon a foreign field, clad in ministerial armor. But that his conviction was that he was "doing good here and that for the present he was where God would have him be."¹ Some persons who did not know General Jackson, or knew him but slightly, have described him as being eccentric. I do not recall having observed anything unusual in this respect, certainly not any of the peculiarities so often made mention of.² To the earnest thinker, who tries to realize what life and its duties are, and who personally knew him, Jackson did not appear eccentric. It may be said

¹ Quoted in Mrs. Jackson's "Life, etc."

² A number of persons who were associated with General Jackson at different periods have expressed views very similar to my own; among others, Dr. James R. Graham of Winchester, Virginia, with whom Jackson made his home in the winter of 1862. He writes, "During all that period I cannot recall a single act or word which I could have wished were different, or which the most censorious could construe to his disadvantage. His demeanor and conversation were those of a dignified and refined gentleman, thoroughly familiar with all the requirements of social life. Reports were rife of his peculiarities. After he had been with us a few days, I remembered these reports and wondering that I had failed to observe anything peculiar, began to watch for the oddities alleged of him. But somehow my powers of discernment were not sufficient to detect what was so patent to others, and I never did discover the remarkable eccentricities of which so much has been said and written. The fact is they did not exist to any observable extent. His manners in company, his gait, his horsemanship all have been described as singular even to grotesqueness. It may be that people have thought to make him more conspicuous as a soldier by caricaturing him as a man. But whatever the motive, these representations have the least possible foundation in fact."—Published in "Things and Thoughts," Winchester, Va., 1901.

that he was peculiar in his intense earnest religion. Were there more such, then this would not be considered a peculiarity. As intimated, Jackson was unquestionably a strict disciplinarian. The cadet who through his own inattention worked out the wrong problem at the blackboard, and received a low instead of the expected high mark; or another who worked out a long and difficult problem, and was told that he had omitted something, and after laboriously going over his example a second time with the same result, was then informed that he had omitted to write his number above the example on the board, could hardly be expected to entertain pleasant feelings towards Major Jackson, until in the course of time and experience the conviction would dawn on him that Jackson was right, and that it had been to each of them, one of their most valuable lessons in life, instructing them in the importance of close observation and attention.¹ Nor was Jackson likely to have much patience with the army officer, whatever his rank, who disregarded his orders, or who through indolence or want of energy neglected a duty, and particularly would this be true in a case bordering on insubordination. It required a satisfactory explanation for a seeming shortcoming. To any who could not give this, Jackson would probably seem unjust. Hence there were of necessity a few

¹ These incidents were related to me by one of the two cadets referred to. My informant had gained distinction as an officer in the Confederate army, and was later a member of the Supreme Court of California, and an eminent writer.—T. J. A.

who were bitter in their feelings towards him at times, and this feeling naturally extended to their personal friends and connection. It is not surprising that some remnant of this should still occasionally appear on the surface. Those in whose bosoms it has found lodgment fully realize the futility of attempting, at this day, unfavorable criticisms of Jackson's military career, and turn their efforts to the less known, and attribute to him personal traits which he did not possess, and under such misrepresentation attempt ridicule, and yet in doing this, find it necessary, to avoid subjecting themselves to censure, to qualify their comments by saying, "Stonewall Jackson is great enough to have no peculiarity apologized for, etc., etc." The only possible effect of such misrepresentations is to somewhat ruffle the feelings of General Jackson's admirers. Scant satisfaction for an injustice to the memory of the dead.

I

YOUTH (1824-1842)

WITHIN a short time after the death of General Jackson, Dr. Dabney, his former Adjutant General, at the instance of many friends (including Mrs. Jackson), wrote a most valuable biography of his late commander. To make his work as complete as possible he endeavored to cover the period of the General's boyhood. As the Civil War was still in progress he was precluded from access to the section of country in which Jackson had been reared, and had but little opportunity for obtaining information; and as General Jackson had never been disposed to dwell upon his personal experiences as topics of conversation, Mrs. Jackson was unable to impart much information upon the circumstances surrounding her husband's boyhood days. Consequently Dr. Dabney's sketch of Jackson's youth was not only scant in material, but far from accurate. Those who have written of General Jackson since that time, knowing of Dr. Dabney's reputation for accuracy in whatever he wrote, have accepted and followed his account, with but slight variation, so that the history of Jackson's boyhood has become "an oft told tale," so much so that one's natural inclination is to pass over this period in silence. Yet under the circumstances this should

not be done, for it is due Jackson's memory, as well as his admirers, that the facts, as far as known, of that part of his life be at least accurately if but briefly narrated. That there have been found no stirring events to record may be considered rather creditable than otherwise to his boyhood. Incidents of moment in a boy's career, that make interesting copy, are not infrequently the outgrowth of a genius for mischief. There is however something of adventure that is not altogether without interest, and indicates a desire on his part, at a very early age, to seek and grasp at opportunity.

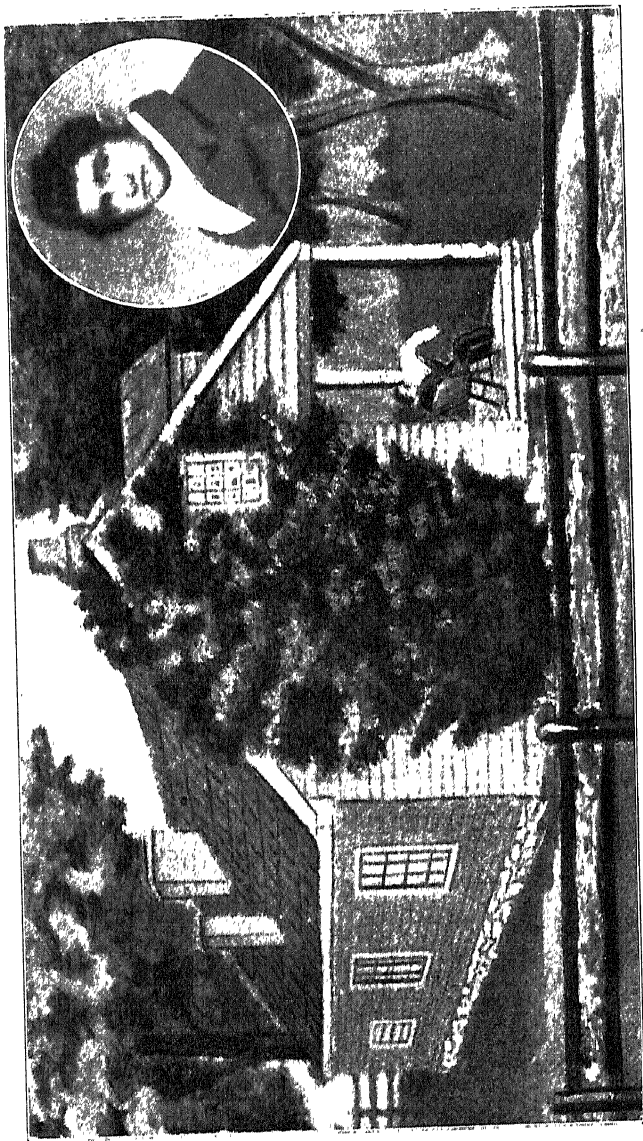
Young Jackson was born in Clarksburg, Harrison County, Virginia, now West Virginia, on the 21st day of January, 1824. As the place of one's nativity not infrequently in after years becomes a matter of doubt, it is here given as it was related to me by the family physician present at the time of his birth.¹ On the 26th day of March, 1827, his father died, just three weeks subsequent to the death of the eldest daughter Elizabeth, who had been stricken with fever, and from whom the father, in nursing her, had contracted the disease, leaving the subject of this sketch an orphan at little more than three years of age. He was named by his mother, Thomas, for her father Thomas Neale. Afterwards, when nearly grown, he added the name of his father, Jonathan.²

¹ The late Dr. James McCalley of Clarksburg, W. Va.

² See quotation from letter from Mr. Sylvanus White, a relative, at page 37. Also receipt given as constable for claim for collection of date July 10, 1841, signed Thos. Jackson, page 37. Also letters from Thomas to his sister of date Sept. 8, 1844, page 66, and Feb. 10, 1845, page 68.

Jonathan Jackson, the father, was a lawyer of prominence, and had acquired a good practice in a town that was always noted for having an exceptional Bar, and second in ability to none in the state, Clarksburg. General Jackson's father was born in Randolph (now Upshur) County, (W.) Va., September 25, 1790, and received a good academic education at the Randolph Academy at Clarksburg. He afterwards took a course of law in the office of his kinsman Judge John G. Jackson, a resident of said town, and was admitted to the Bar at that place at the December term of Court, 1810, he having just passed his twentieth year, an unusual distinction for one of his years. At that period a lawyer in practice did well if his profession yielded a support for himself and family. If he acquired anything in excess of this, it was almost invariably the result of speculation. During a short period of the sixteen years that Jonathan Jackson practiced law, he filled the position of Collector of United States Excise Tax or Internal Revenue. It may also be mentioned that in 1812 Jonathan Jackson and others raised a company of cavalry, of which he was elected First Lieutenant, and tendered their services to the President of the United States, in the war against England.¹ The presumption is that the company was not called into actual service, as there is no record of a cavalry company being in the service from that section of the state. Upon the death of Jonathan

¹ See records of Harrison County Court, June Term, 1812. Also History of Harrison County, Haymond.



COTTAGE IN WHICH GENERAL JACKSON WAS BORN AT CLARKSBURG, W. VA.
MINIATURE OF HIS FATHER, JONATHAN JACKSON.

Jackson, his little family was left in destitute circumstances. When his widow had sufficiently recovered from the shock of this double affliction, she opened a private school, and in that way, and with the aid of her needle, supported herself and children until her second marriage, in 1830, to Captain Blake B. Woodson, a resident lawyer of Clarksburg. The newly wedded couple shortly afterwards removed to Fayette County, (West) Virginia, where Captain Woodson was appointed clerk of the Court. Before leaving Clarksburg, Warren, the eldest child, was sent to make his home with his uncle, Alfred Neale, near Parkersburg, and with whom he continued to reside for a number of years. At the early age of sixteen years he was employed to teach a school in Upshur County, and from that time forward made his home there. The other two children, Thomas and Laura, their mother took with her to Fayette County. Mrs. Woodson continued in such delicate health, and the care of the children was so great a tax upon her strength, that within a few months after her arrival there, she consented to let their Grandmother Jackson take them to her home in Lewis County, some four miles north of Weston, where she lived with her unmarried daughters and sons. The grandmother sent one of these sons to Fayette County for the children. Upon his arrival, and the object of his visit being made known, there was quite a commotion on the part of the children, who were much averse to leaving their mother. Thomas, now six years of age, slipped off to the

near-by woods, where he concealed himself, only returning to the house at nightfall. The uncle after a day or two of much coaxing, and the offer of numerous bribes, finally, with the mother's aid, induced the children to make the visit, a journey of several days. Upon arrival at their destination, they became the pets of an indulgent grandmother, two maiden aunts, and several bachelor uncles, all of whom were noted for great kindness of heart, and strong family attachment. A few months thereafter the children were sent in the care of one of the negro men, Uncle Robinson, a trusted servant, to see their mother, then on her death bed. They arrived in time to receive her dying blessing and prayers;¹ and then returned to make their home with the grandmother. It was a happy home for the children. They were indulged in every way, and to an extent well calculated to spoil them.² In August, 1835, death claimed the much loved grandmother. The two maiden aunts had in the meantime married, and were living in their own houses. As only the bachelor uncles, and the slaves, were left, the home for the children was broken up. Thomas, now nearly twelve years of age, was received into the household of a relative by the name of Brake, who lived a few miles from Clarksburg. His sister Laura, after some months spent with her aunts in the vicinity, was sent to reside with the family of one of her mother's brothers, who lived a few miles above Parkersburg.

¹ See letters in after life, referring to mother's prayers.

² See letter of August 2, 1845, page 71.

Thomas soon tired of the change and longed for the domicile and company of his bachelor uncles, to whom he had become greatly attached. Whether with the knowledge and consent of the relatives, with whom he was living, or whether, according to tradition, he took French leave from their hospitable hearth: be that as it may; within a day or two from the time of his departure he made his appearance at the old homestead of his Grandfather Jackson, where his Uncle Cummins and the other bachelor uncles still resided; no doubt to his own great pleasure, and equally to that of the uncles, who were extremely fond of him, and it may be added to the no less enjoyment of the family slaves, whose well-known partiality and affection for the white children was ever in evidence, and the sincerity of which was unmistakable. Dr. Dabney in his "Life of Jackson," in relating this change of residence, mentions an incident which he says is most fully authenticated, occurring when young Jackson was but eight years old "and shows that nature made him from the first of another mould from that of common men."¹ He appeared one day at the house of his father's cousin, Judge John G. Jackson, in Clarksburg, and addressing Mrs. Jackson by the title of aunt, which he usually gave her, asked her to give him dinner. While he was eating it, he remarked in a very quiet tone, "Uncle Brake and I don't

¹This was subsequent to his Grandmother Jackson's death, which had occurred in August, 1835. Thomas was therefore past twelve years of age.—T. J. A.

agree ; I have quit him, and shall not go back any more." His kind hostess remonstrated against this purpose as a childish whim. He listened most respectfully to all her reasoning, but returned to the same resolute declaration : " No ; Uncle Brake and I can't agree ; I have quit, and shall not go back any more." From Judge Jackson's he went to a favorite cousin's, lately married and living in her own house, and asked leave of her to spend the night. In the course of the evening he announced his purpose of leaving his home, and, after listening respectfully to her remonstrances likewise, returned resolutely to his old formula—"No ; Uncle Brake and I don't agree ; I have quit there ; I shall not go back any more." Dr. Dabney then gives some logical reason for this conduct on the part of the young boy. A letter from Major Jackson, written to me some twenty years later, in 1855, not only furnishes ample proof of his sojourn with his Uncle Brake, the truth of which fact has been questioned by some, but affords a probable solution of the cause for the change of residence which took place, as well as for his very positive and pronounced opposition to returning to this uncle. The letter referred to was in reply to one I had written to him, wherein, among other things, I had mentioned being thrown from a mule. I quote from the reply : " I remember having once been served pretty much the same way by one of those kicking creatures. It happened in this way : I went with Cousin Wm. Brake ¹ to bring some mules

¹ A son of the uncle with whom he was making his home.

home one Sunday morning and as I was riding down a long hill, somehow or other I not only got over the mark across his shoulders, but he got me over his head, and jumped clear over me ; and from that day to this I have not been very fond of mule riding." He doubtless thought that this uncle had not shown a sufficient care for him in allowing him to ride an animal without knowing that it was gentle and safe. Then again, from what he stated in after years as to his mother's injunction at their last interview, he would be likely to feel that were she living her consent would not have been given to his going a distance to fetch mules on the Sabbath day. At his Uncle Cummins' home he attended the country school, and made himself useful ; for he bore the reputation of being an industrious boy. Some two years later his brother Warren, who had been teaching school for some time past in the vicinity of the relatives with whom he resided, stopped to see Thomas, on his way to visit their sister Laura, near Parkersburg. Nothing was more natural than that Thomas should be eager to join his brother for the visit to their sister. As Warren was a bright youth with steady habits (his associates, some of whom are still living, bear witness to his high Christian character), nothing was more natural than that a kind-hearted uncle like Cummins E. Jackson would consent to Thomas' accompanying him, a distance of some eighty miles. The journey was undertaken and the boys arrived finally at their destination, where they visited their sister at the comfortable

home of their mother's brother, Mr. Alfred Neale, on a beautiful island in the Ohio River. They there learned that this island containing some 150 acres had been purchased by this uncle and one of his brothers, and that in clearing up the land the uncles had sold sufficient cord-wood from it to the passing steamboats to not only pay for the clearing but for the cost of the land, a magnificent and valuable farm. One can imagine the impression made upon the minds of Warren and Thomas, orphan, penniless boys as they were, when they looked upon this farm and realized in what manner the uncles had paid for it. The call was as strong as was that of California to the Argonauts of '49, to go farther down the river, and do likewise. After visiting their sister they continued their journey down the river some twenty miles to the old town of Belleville, where one of their father's sisters and her husband, a Mr. George White, resided. After visiting this uncle and aunt, and to whom the boys were much attached, they continued down the river in quest of fortune. Thomas a few years later refers to this visit in a letter to his sister who was at the time making her home with these relatives. It is dated West Point, March 18, 1843.

I feel well pleased at your having a home with a grateful aunt, one to whom I shall ever owe a debt of gratitude. I had the honor of making for a few weeks my abode within her hospitable doors, and of amiable ladies I think she is the most amiable. Therefore I will expect that you will spare no pains to render yourself worthy of their

confidence, and in order to do so there is but one path, and that is amiable conduct towards them and all others, and industrious habits. I am well satisfied with my situation and surrounded by apparent friends. Give my best regards to uncle and aunt. Your most endeared and loving brother,

THOS. J. JACKSON.

The aunt and uncle referred to were kind-hearted, sensible people, who no doubt used every proper effort to persuade the boys from their venture, but without avail. This is by no means surprising, in view of occurrences that have taken place since that time, and with which many persons still living are familiar. In the gold excitement in California in 1849 and following years, numbers of boys of sixteen, some possibly younger, made the journey across the plains to the Pacific, often with the parents' consent—presumably given with reluctance. Then again in 1861, how many boys of fourteen and fifteen years of age, throughout the Southern States, enlisted in the army; most of those of that age who did not go remaining at home only by the exercise of the strongest parental control. The two brothers travelled as far south as the southwest corner of Kentucky, where they remained throughout the winter and spring. As to their life there little is known, as they were ever afterwards reluctant to talk much of that experience. They did not acquire the fortune, however. The impression among the friends and relatives was that Warren wanted to remain, but that Thomas, presumably homesick, persisted in returning. They took passage by steamboat, land-

ing at the home of their uncle, Alfred Neale, on the island before described, each the proud possessor of a new trunk containing their personal effects. Thus through the failure of the expedition the West probably lost two valuable citizens, while the South gained a great leader for her future struggle for independence. Another instance of the effect of some seemingly insignificant happening upon future events of great moment, the guidance of Providence. This recalls to my mind a favorite quotation of General Jackson, a couplet that I have heard him repeat :

“ God moves in a mysterious way
His wonders to perform.”

The boys remained but a few days visiting their sister and younger half brother, and then departed for their respective homes. As they were to journey on foot, they had little use for the new trunks. Thomas gave his to his little sister, Laura, and which she treasured and kept to the day of her death, but recently at the age of eighty-five years, Warren giving his to his little half brother, Wirt.¹ Warren soon after their return resumed his school teaching, and Thomas his duties with his Uncle Cummins. The health of both boys was a good deal impaired by the climate and malaria of the Mississippi, Warren dying, some three years later at the age of nineteen, of consumption, attributed by his friends to be due to exposure on this western river expedition. As an indication

¹ The above account of this journey I had in part from my mother, in part from the two uncles, therein referred to, and from other relatives.
—T. J. A.

of the high esteem in which this youth was held in the vicinity where he had made his home for the last three or four years of his life, it may be mentioned that in a subsequent rearranging of the Districts of the county, the District embracing this vicinity was named for him, "Warren," and which name it still retains. At the age of sixteen Thomas, through the influence of his uncle, Cummins E. Jackson, was appointed by the County Court of his county (Lewis) to the office of constable for his Magisterial District. This clearly indicates the influence of the uncle in the county, and also the confidence of the uncle in the judgment and character of his nephew. For a boy of but sixteen years to have received such an appointment, he unquestionably must have impressed the Court that he possessed character and judgment in advance of his years. While the office of constable is not a very important one, yet there are responsibilities connected with it that make it very essential that the incumbent be trustworthy, and capable of exercising discretion in the discharge of the duties pertaining thereto; otherwise the sureties on his official bond might be subjected to heavy damages through a false arrest, levying wrongfully or through error on property not that of the debtor, and all of which sometimes happens. Cummins E. Jackson was a man of considerable wealth and prominence. There was no better judge of men than he. He not only vouched for the proper conduct of the office by Thomas, but he and another uncle of the neighborhood, John

White, who also knew Thomas well, became sureties on his official bond.

The father admitted to practise at the Bar at twenty years of age, Warren the eldest son given charge of a school at sixteen or even younger, Thomas at the age of sixteen appointed to the office of constable, would indicate not only ambition but more than ordinary ability in the father and sons. It may be here mentioned as worthy of note that, in the adjoining county of Harrison, there served as constable a young man who afterwards became Governor of Virginia, Joseph Johnson.

Cummins E. Jackson could foresee that the experience to be gained in the discharge of the duties of this office would be an invaluable training to a young man who had to battle with the world for a livelihood. The knowledge he would acquire of men, their business methods, their resourcefulness in avoiding the just demands of their creditors, the many evasions practised, would give young Jackson a varied and exceedingly useful experience. Besides a good deal of practical knowledge of the law was to be acquired by the official in the exercise of his duties, all of which counted for more to a young man than anything to be gained at the best schools in the same period of time.

Nothing unusual happened during this incumbency, the duties of the office being discharged in a methodical, businesslike manner, fully justifying the judgment and confidence of his uncle. In this connection the following quotation is from a recent letter that I received from Mr. Sylvanus White of

Los Angeles, California, a former resident of Lewis County, (West) Virginia, and a near relative, contemporary and occasional associate of young Jackson. He says, "The Jackson children (referring to Thomas and his brother and sister) were never given a home by my parents. Thomas used to visit us occasionally—Tom, as he called himself when a boy. I have been told that he gave himself his father's name, Jonathan, and that he did not take this name until he was sixteen or eighteen years old." Referring to the period when young Jackson was constable he relates, "I went with him on one occasion (I suppose father sent me) to show him the near way through the forest, over the hills some three or four miles, to a man's house by the name of Dennis, whom he wished to serve with a legal process. He left his horse at father's, and we went on foot. He served his papers, and we returned home." "I remember to have seen him and William Stringer have a very hot political discussion one day in Weston. Stringer was an ardent Whig; he was perhaps forty-five years of age. Thomas would not stand having his word disputed, but went and brought papers and proved his point. Father was a security for him in his official capacity. Thomas never superintended his uncle's farm, or the mill work; some of the uncles were always at home. He was a great favorite of mine, one of the most sincere, upright, polite persons I ever knew. The biographies written of him as to his early life are in many respects erroneous."

II

ANCESTRY

A BRIEF résumé of General Jackson's ancestry should be given the reader at this period of the sketch. The Jackson ancestry has not been traced, nor has any effort been made to do so, beyond the generation that came to America. The following letter from the pen of the late Captain George W. Jackson of Weston, W. Va., a first cousin of General Jackson's father, addressed to Mr. Jonathan Arnold, the brother-in-law of General Jackson, bearing on this subject is here given.

Weston, May 20, 1871.

DEAR SIR:

I regret that I did not see you when you were in Weston. As I understood from J. C. Jackson you desired some information relative to our family. I believe that I can give you the requisite information that you can rely on. I am now in my eighty-first year, and was about thirteen or fourteen years old when my grandfather (John Jackson) died in Clarksburg. I was placed in the mill with him as he could not be induced to leave it, as it occupied his mind, etc. Many of the facts that I relate I had from him, some from my grandmother, some from my father (George Jackson), and all confirmed by a detailed statement of my sister, (Mrs.) Williams, who being intimate with grandmother for more than fifty

years, had them often repeated by her. John Jackson, my grandfather, was born in Ireland.¹ He with his father and two brothers moved to London when he was a child. John Jackson's father died when he was young. After arriving at manhood he emigrated to Maryland;² he settled in Cecil County. He there married Elizabeth Cummins, and remained some time after the birth of George Jackson, my father, and removed to Moorefield, thence to Pendleton County, thence to Buckhannon, thence to Clarksburg, where both died,—grandfather at eighty-five,³ and grandmother at a hundred and one years of age. Elizabeth Cummins and an orphan sister were born in England and raised by a maiden aunt; her sister married and emigrated to the city of New York. Elizabeth would have gone with her, but was prevailed on to remain by a promise that at her aunt's death she would leave her one thousand pounds. She (the aunt) died in two or three years. Elizabeth after obtaining her money sailed for New York in search of her sister. After her arrival and diligent search, ascertained that she, her husband and two children had died of the yellow fever the year preceding. She then went to Maryland and found some acquaintances from England with whom she lived until she married my grandfather in 1755. She often assured my sister and felt proud of it that the land patented in her name including the town of Buckhannon was paid for in gold she had brought from England and repeatedly showed with seeming pleasure a few guineas she retained till her death. The question has often been asked me if any relationship existed between my father and General Andrew Jackson, and upon inquiry of my father on that subject, I obtained the following facts. Andrew

¹ In the year 1719.² In the year 1748.³ September 25, 1804.

Jackson and my father were members of Congress in '96 or '97 or '98, became intimate, and in after life corresponded, particularly during the exciting campaigns of 1824 and '28. While in Congress they compared notes as to the probability of relationship; they settled on this alone, that their parents both lived in the same parish in Ireland; although they had no data to establish relationship and never claimed it, they believed it existed, etc. Both were of Protestant families.

With respect, etc.,

Jona. Arnold.

GEO. W. JACKSON.

John Jackson, named in the above letter, is described by another grandson, Judge John G. Jackson, in a letter written by him to his wife's sister, Mrs. Dolly Madison, "as a man of great corporeal strength, and who had spent his long life in noble and virtuous pursuits, which endear men to their acquaintance." "I saw him breathe his last in the arms of my aged grandmother, and can truly add that to live and die as he did would be the excess of happiness." The same John Jackson and his eldest son George visited the vicinity of the present town of Buckhannon as early as the year 1769. He made what was termed a tomahawk claim at the confluence of Turkey Run with the Buckhannon River. They cleared some land and planted a crop of corn, and returned to their home, east of the Alleghany Mountain. In the following autumn they went back with the intention to harvest and store their corn, with the view of moving the family there later. Upon their arrival they found that the buffalo had destroyed

their crop. This necessitated delay in removal until the following year, 1770. John Jackson and his two eldest sons, George and Edward, served in the war for Independence until its close. George held the commission of captain. Whether the father and brother held commissions in the army is unknown; tradition says they did. The wife of John Jackson is described as a large, strong-minded, energetic, courageous woman, of great strength of character, which traits were inherited by many of her descendants. The members of the family mentioned bore each his full share in defending the settlements from the attacks of the Indians, and were ever vigilant and dependable in any emergency. George Jackson, the eldest son, was a member of the Virginia Convention that adopted the Constitution of the United States, and he afterwards served in the fourth, sixth and seventh Congresses,¹ his first term being the last one of Washington's administration, and was held in Philadelphia. In later life he removed to Zanesville, Ohio, and represented his county in the Ohio Legislature and was later a member of the Senate of that state. His eldest son, John G. Jackson, was elected to the Virginia Legislature of 1797, and several succeeding terms. He was appointed and commissioned surveyor of government lands west of the Ohio River. He was elected and served in the eighth, ninth, tenth,

¹ The last Congressional Directory, 1913, gives George Jackson membership in the fourth Congress only; but as this directory contains a number of inaccuracies, the earlier directories naming him as a member of the fourth, sixth and seventh Congresses have been accepted as the better authority.—T. J. A.

eleventh, thirteenth and fourteenth Congresses, commencing in 1803. He was appointed and commissioned brigadier-general of the Virginia Militia. In the year 1819 he was appointed United States District Judge for the District of Western Virginia, and held that office till his death, March 29, 1825. He married Miss Mary Payne, sister of the famed Dolly Madison, and also a sister of Mrs. George Steptoe Washington, whose husband was a nephew of George Washington, and one of the administrators of his estate. This marriage of John G. Jackson and Mary Payne is said to have taken place in the White House, being the first ceremony of the kind solemnized therein.¹ While serving in Congress, John G. Jackson fought a duel with Congressman Pearson of South Carolina, in which he was wounded in the hip, thereby causing a lameness for life.²

Another son of George Jackson, Edward B. Jackson, was elected to Congress in 1820, and upon expiration of his term was reëlected. A grandson of this same George, William L. Jackson, was Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia; he was afterwards elected and served as Judge of the Circuit Superior Court in that state and later was a brigadier-general in the Confederate army. After the Civil War he removed to Kentucky where he was elected Circuit Judge, and held that position until his death. An-

¹ On the authority of their eldest daughter, the late Mrs. John J. Allen, wife of Judge Allen, long a member of the Supreme Court of Virginia, who stated that she had often heard it related by her parents.

² Haymond's "History of Harrison County." I have also heard my father relate the same incident.—T. J. A.

other relative, Jacob B. Jackson, was Governor of West Virginia. The latter's brother, John J. Jackson, Jr., was appointed Judge of the United States District Court for the District of West Virginia, which position he filled for more than forty years. Another brother, James Monroe Jackson, was also on the bench for many years in the same state, and as a member of the West Virginia Constitutional Convention, in 1872, gained as much distinction as any member of that body. Edward Jackson, the second son of John Jackson, and grandfather of Thomas, the subject of this sketch, married Mary Hadden, the daughter of David Hadden, October 17, 1783. David Hadden, with other members of his family, emigrated from New Jersey, in which colony the name had long been prominent, and settled in the beautiful Tygarts Valley, in what was afterwards Randolph County, Virginia, in 1772. They selected for their homes the choicest lands in that valley and were soon recognized as leading men in the community. John Hadden, a son of David, Edward Jackson, his brother-in-law, and John Jackson, the father of Edward, were each members of the first court held in Randolph County in 1787, having been appointed and commissioned as such officials by the Governor of Virginia. The same John Hadden and one John Wilson were the first members to represent the newly organized county in the State Legislature; and it has been common repute from that time to the present that the county at no time has been so ably represented. Edward Jackson was a merchant

in Clarksburg as late as the spring of 1786. Presumably he was the first merchant in the town. As illustrative of the custom of that time, a young daughter of David Hadden, accompanied by a married sister, travelled from her home on horseback over a mountain trail in 1788 to Clarksburg, a distance of seventy or seventy-five miles, to visit their relatives there, and to attend a protracted meeting that was to be held at that place. An account is given of the journey here described, but without mentioning names, in the diary kept by Bishop Asbury, who attended and conducted the meeting.¹ Upon returning through the wilderness the unmarried daughter, Margaret, parted with her sister at the latter's home near the site of the present town of Buckhannon, and continued her journey alone, a distance of some forty or more miles. Dark coming on in the wilderness near Roaring Creek, she could not distinguish the bridle path ; she thereupon tied her horse fast to a sapling and crawled under a cliff of rocks and slept until it was sufficiently light in the morning to discern the trail, when she continued her journey home. Wild animals, such as panther, catamounts, wolves and bear, were plentiful in that section, even to a much later period, aside from the not infrequent incursions of raiding Indians. Only a few years prior to the date mentioned, her uncle, a brother of David Hadden, who with his family had settled a few miles below David in the valley, was with his family, excepting one son,

¹ Bishop Asbury's diary was afterwards published in book form.

murdered by the Indians, their house and its contents pillaged and burned. This was witnessed by the son, William, who was concealed near by in a sink hole, covered with driftwood, but powerless to render any aid. The Indians searched for him in the drift, but failed to find him. In consequence of the barbarity which he witnessed upon that occasion he became the unrelenting foe of the Indians, and when they ceased coming to that section he followed in their footsteps further west, as they retired, until all trace of him was lost.¹ Edward Jackson, the grandfather of Thomas, held various prominent official positions in Randolph County. About the year 1801 he removed to that part of Harrison County, now within the confines of Lewis County, and where Thomas afterwards made his home with his grandmother and her family. In 1803 and 1804 he represented Harrison County in the Legislature at Richmond. He died December 26, 1828, in the seventieth year of his age. Of the ancestry of General Jackson's mother, the earliest one of whom there is any knowledge, and this is by tradition in the family only, was Daniel Neale, of whom it was said that he held a commission in the English army. He emigrated from Ireland in 1649, and located in Northumberland County, Virginia. His property in Ireland, it was represented, had been confiscated during the war of the Commonwealth, and he was forced to leave the country because of political and religious troubles.

¹ "History Randolph County," Maxwell.

In the year 1692 Thomas Neale, a descendant and presumably a grandson of Daniel, was commissioned by Royal Patent Postmaster General of Virginia and all the other colonies. This was the first postal service established in the colonies. It may be mentioned that the post-rider did not start on his route until a sufficient number of letters had been lodged to defray all expenses of his journey. In years afterwards Benjamin Franklin was appointed and commissioned to this same office, and continued therein until near the commencement of the Revolution. Richard Neale, a descendant, presumably a grandson of the said Thomas, resided in Westmoreland County, Virginia. Some time subsequent to the year 1767, he and his family removed to Loudon County in the same state.¹ About the year 1800 Richard Neale's son, Thomas Neale, father of General Jackson's mother, along with his brothers, George, William, Richard and James, removed from Loudon County and settled in Wood County, (West) Virginia. Thomas had previously married Margaret Wynne of Loudon County. They had eleven children who arrived at maturity. The third child of this marriage, Julia Beckwith Neale, the mother of the subject of

¹The information here given regarding the Neale family is from letters received by me from Mrs. Alfred Neale of near Parkersburg, W. Va., a sister-in-law of General Jackson's mother, a lady of unusual information and intelligence, and whose name appears occasionally herein in correspondence with Major Jackson. Mrs. Neale has now been dead many years, and while she was very careful in any statements of facts, it is to be regretted that she failed to disclose the source of her information as to the Neale ancestry.—T. J. A.

this sketch, was born in the latter county, February 29, 1798.¹ She was married to Jonathan Jackson in Wood County in the year 1818. Immediately following their marriage they located in Clarksburg, (West) Virginia, where her husband had already established himself in the practise of the law, as has heretofore been stated, and where they continued to reside until his death, and in which place she remained until after her second marriage.

In several of the biographies that have been written of General Jackson, as well as in some other publications, mention is made of the absence of religious sentiment, and the lax methods that prevailed in that section of Virginia in early or pioneer times, and down to and including the period of young Jackson's youth. A careful investigation of conditions existing in that section of the country, and covering the entire period referred to, does not warrant such conclusion. We are prone to picture in our minds a state of constant improvement, and like overwise children are ever in advance of our fathers. If we but turn to the court records of pioneer days in Harrison, Randolph and other counties, we are astonished to find frequent indictment and punishment inflicted for offenses that at the present day are committed with impunity, and with no thought of a penalty being imposed : for instance, the carry-

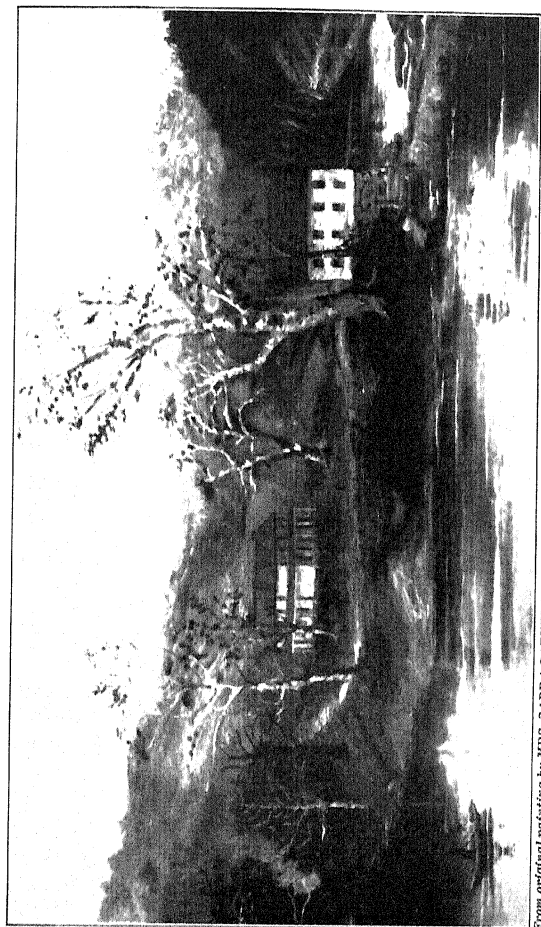
¹I am informed that the house in which Julia Beckwith Neale was born is still standing, on what is known as the "Peach Orchard" farm near Aldie, Loudon County, Virginia, formerly the property and home of her father, Thomas Neale.—T. J. A.

ing of a grist of corn to the mill on the Sabbath and similar violations of that day; for using profane language in public places, and for card playing. There were indictments for these and similar misdemeanors at almost every term of court. Who of the present generation have heard of the punishment of such offenses? Many there were who had no church affiliations or religious tendencies, just as one finds it to-day. In some communities more religious observance than in others. In this connection the following quotation is given from "The Monongahela of Old," by Hon. James Veach, wherein he entertainingly describes the early settlements prior to the year 1800, in a section contiguous to that just referred to and between the residents whereof there was direct and constant intercourse, in many respects one and the same country and people. After mentioning the different religious denominations represented, Baptist, Presbyterian, Methodist and others, he says, "Nearly all our temples were in the country, away from the noise and revelry of the villages, rearing their humble roofs beneath the shade of the oak, on some flower-decked eminence, or in some quiet vale, beside some noiseless spring . . . fit localities at which to drink of the wells of the water of life. And then the old country schools with their puncheon floors and benches. They were plentifully scattered among our early settlements. There is scarcely a neighborhood . . . where some survivor of the second generation cannot point you to the spot where his young ideas were taught to

shoot and he to play." Then again, "Almost every country preacher was a teacher of Latin and mathematics. They were often better qualified than many modern 'professors.'" And then of the "pioneers," "Take them all in all, they were generally men and women of whom their posterity may be proud." "We will find many things in the character of our early settlers to command our admiration—many to attract our imitation; while in a few, their errors and aberrations stand out as beacons to warn us that with all their heroic excellencies they still were men." Of character, "It was that of original settlers everywhere in many respects. The first settlers came here not merely to better their condition, but to gratify their taste. . . . Fearless of danger, yet fearing their God. . . . The men of that day sought to be a law unto themselves, and were of too lofty a spirit to be actors in the low kennels of modern chicanery. Their word was their bond,—its seal their honor,—its penalty the fear of social degradation."

Surprise is expressed by Colonel Henderson in his "Life of Jackson," as well as by other of his biographers, at Jackson growing up to be a man of veracity, of correct habits and of marked piety, considering his surroundings in youth. Unfortunately the persons from whom Colonel Henderson and others derived their information, which afforded a basis for such comments, were evidently not familiar with conditions as had existed in that region; but without having opportunity of turning to the records, or of

seeking evidence from original sources, they gave expression, no doubt innocently, to their own erroneous opinions as to the character of customs which they assumed would naturally prevail in a country regarded by them as but little removed from the frontier, and to which they were unfortunately strangers. Many of General Jackson's relatives were pious people with active church affiliations; some were not. Of his great-grandparents, John Jackson and wife, the former, as elsewhere herein shown, was a man of good habits. It is not now known whether he was a church member or not; the latter was. His Grandmother Jackson and her father's family, the Haddens, were as devout Christians as was General Jackson himself. His mother and her family, the Neales, were people of marked piety. Many of Thomas' relatives living within visiting distance of where his boyhood days were passed, and with whom he no doubt frequently associated, were pious people, so that had he grown up to be other than a man of rectitude, it would have been surprising. In letter after letter written by General Jackson in later life he refers to the blessing that should come to his sister and himself from his mother's and brother's prayers, showing that from infancy his mind was directed towards God. To those interested in the subject of heredity it may not be amiss to quote a few passages from the will of General Jackson's great-grandfather, David Hadden, filed for record in the County Court of Randolph County in the year 1791. It is not at all probable that General Jackson



From original painting by MRS. SABRA CATHER WOODFORD. Used by permission.

RESIDENCE AND MILL OF CUMMINS E. JACKSON,

Lewis County, West Virginia, where young Jackson made his home from the age of 7 years until the date of his departure for West Point. His last words were, "Let us cross over the river and rest under the shade of the trees," May 10, 1863.

ever saw or heard of this will, as it was not even known to the descendants of David Hadden of the last generation residing in the county where filed, and was only discovered in recent years in searching through some old records. Commencing in the usual form of wills of that period, he continues, "Being very frail and weak in body, but of perfect mind and memory, thanks be to God. Calling unto mind the mortality of my body, and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last will and testament; that is to say, principally and first of all, I give and recommend my soul into the hand of Almighty God that gave it; and my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in a decent and Christian burial, at the discretion of my executors, nothing doubting but at the general resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty Power of God. And as touching such worldly estate wherewith it has pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, devise," etc., etc. . . .

Dated 13th May, 1791. Proved in court, December 26, 1791. The deep intense Christian faith and trust disclosed in the foregoing sentences might well find a counterpart in the simple, trusting faith of General Jackson himself.

III

WEST POINT (1842-)

IN the period in which young Jackson was constable, a vacancy occurred at the United States Military Academy at West Point for a cadetship from the District in which he resided. Through the influence of the same Uncle Cummins who was an intimate friend of the Hon. Samuel S. Hayes, Member of Congress from said District, Thomas was appointed in 1842, upon the recommendation of the latter, to fill the vacancy.¹ He at once resigned his office as constable, leaving the closing up of the business connected with it in the hands of his Uncle Cummins. His educational advantages had been quite limited, and he now had very little time in which to prepare for the examinations preliminary to admission to the academy. He sought the assistance of a prominent gentleman, a friend of the family, who was well qualified and ready to extend a

¹ Mr. Sylvanus White, of whom mention has been made before, writes that Hon. Samuel S. Hayes was a close friend of the Jacksons. I have been also informed that Hon. J. M. Bennett, of Weston, (West) Virginia, used his influence with Mr. Hayes to secure the appointment of young Jackson. In the early part of the Civil War General Jackson tendered this gentleman, who at the time was Auditor of the State of Virginia, the position of Adjutant General or Chief of his Staff, but the appointment was declined.—T. J. A.

helping hand. Every minute possible was utilized in preparation to the time of his departure. He travelled by horseback to Clarksburg, and there learning that the stage-coach in which he purposed going had just passed, he left his horse, and travelling on foot a much shorter route than by the main road, overtook the coach at a little distance from that town and continued his journey in it. He reported to Congressman Hayes in Washington, and receiving his appointment, from there continued his journey to West Point, where he passed his examination and was duly enrolled on the 1st of July, 1842. Before discussing young Jackson's life at West Point it is proper to turn for a brief period to the uncle, of whom occasional mention has been made, but whose name from this time forward will but seldom appear. The biographers of General Jackson have each referred to him, Dr. Dabney at greater length than any other.

As the relations existing between the subject of this sketch and this uncle were unusual, and as Thomas was with and under his influence in what may be termed the formative period of his life, and as he always afterwards expressed the greatest fondness for and devotion to this uncle, I will not only quote from Dr. Dabney, but add some particulars that have since come within my personal knowledge. I remember having seen Cummins E. Jackson on one occasion when he visited my father's home, just prior to his departure for California in the spring of 1849. Although I was a mere child at the time, I recall dis-

tinctly the man with large, piercing blue-gray eyes, smooth face, who inclined his head (hardly from necessity) whenever he passed through a smaller door leading to the dining-room; the servants of the household called my attention to it, and explained that he had to do so on account of being so tall. He was of stout frame but not corpulent. That is the extent of the observation, the accuracy of which has since been verified by his contemporaries who knew him well. Dr. Dabney says, "This remarkable uncle claims our notice, not only for his paternal kindness to the orphan, but for the influence which he exerted, and for that which, contrary to all human calculation, he failed to exert upon him. He was then approaching middle life, a bachelor of lofty stature and most athletic frame,¹ and full of all the rugged energy of his race. The native powers of his mind, although not cultivated by a liberal education, were so strong that some of his acquaintances have declared him to be, in their opinion, the ablest man they ever knew. His will was as strong as his understanding. . . . As a friend he was steadfast and generous without stint; and though forbearing and slow to take offense, as an enemy he was equally bitter and unforgiving. Such was his liberality that his poorer neighbors and dependents adored him. He never had political aspirations for himself, but his unbounded influence usually gave the honors of his county to the person whom he favored. . . .

¹ He was about thirty-six years of age, six feet, two and a half inches in height, and of some two hundred pounds weight.

He was so passionately fond of litigation that his legal controversies consumed a large part of the income of a liberal estate and the earnings of his own giant industry. He owned a valuable farm and mills, and was one of the largest slaveholders in the county of Lewis.¹ . . . In this home Thomas received all the privileges of a son of the family. The relation existing between him and his uncle was, from the first, remarkable. He treated the little boy more as a companion than as a child . . . and always rather requested than demanded his compliance with the discipline of the household. The child was thus stimulated to the work of his own self-government from a very early period, and left to an independence of action more suited for a man. But he did not disappoint his uncle's confidence. . . . The uncle, though temperate and energetic, was himself utterly devoid of Christianity. . . . The wonder is that the circumstances which surrounded him (Thomas) did not make him simply another Cummins E. Jackson. The generous kindness of this uncle, the force of his example, the similarity of the two in the strength and ardor of their natures, and the impress of a will so energetic and commanding, would seem naturally to tend to that result. But the nephew seems to have imbibed all of the good traits of the uncle and to have escaped the bad." The sketch from which the above quotations are made is in some respects inaccurate. It is but

¹ Cummins E. Jackson owned a number of slaves. There were no large slaveholders in Lewis County.—T. J. A.

fair and just to Dr. Dabney to quote from the preface of his "Life of Jackson," wherein he states "that the whole work was written before the termination of the contest (Civil War)." As the section of Western Virginia where Cummins E. Jackson had resided was within the federal lines, and far distant from Dr. Dabney, and of course inaccessible to him at that time, it was impossible for him to gather more than meagre knowledge. Cummins E. Jackson had some bitter enemies, and it is clearly evident that a part at least of what the doctor has written was gleaned through such channels. I have had exceptional opportunities for obtaining information from many sources, much of it at first hand. Cummins E. Jackson was in no sense a religious man; that he had his faults, as do others, goes without saying, but there were many fine traits to his credit on the final balance sheet. He was temperate and of the strictest veracity. He was of too strong mentality, liberality and fairness to attempt to divert the mind of a child from the teaching and injunctions of that child's dying mother. Although irreligious, as Dr. Dabney says, yet the very thought of influencing, or of trying to influence this little fatherless, motherless boy, under such circumstances, would have been repellent and abhorrent to his whole nature. Cummins E. Jackson was too big and noble hearted to have so much as countenanced such a thought. Unquestionably, a great deal of young Jackson's development should be credited to this uncle, who doubtless understood the child and

encouraged all of his better impulses. There can be no doubt that the mother's last admonitions to the seven-year-old boy, often referred to in his letters in later life, and her dying injunction, were indelibly engraved into his very being and abided with and influenced him throughout life. Of this uncle General Jackson always spoke with grateful affection, as he was evidently his favorite nephew. In the letter heretofore quoted, from Mr. White, he states "that he (Cummins) was more fond of Thomas than of his own brother." Quoting further from Dr. Dabney, "Cummins displayed his restless love of adventure by going when he was forty-nine (forty-seven) years old to seek gold in California. He was also impelled in part by disgust at the persecutions of some of his neighbors, with whom his feuds had become perfectly inveterate. His ample farm and competency could not detain him. He crossed the plains with a well equipped company of gold-hunters, of whom he was recognized as the chief, in 1849," and died not long afterwards. The following information conveyed in a letter from Major Jackson to his sister, written from Fort Hamilton, New York, of date February 1, 1849, and which it is highly probable was also imparted by him directly to his Uncle Cummins, had much to do with the organizing and departure of this company for California; he writes, "The gold fever is running very high here. I have conversed with Mr. Loesser, an officer of the army, from California, who says that a person can gather on an average about seventy-five dollars per day."

Little do those of the younger generation of the present day realize what the California gold fever was. The above quotation from what all would regard as a strictly reliable source will enable one to form a somewhat correct idea of the cause that appealed to and excited the imagination. One can hardly estimate what seventy-five dollars per day at that period, particularly in the rural districts, would be the equivalent of at the present time. No doubt all who undertook this journey expected to return in the course of two or three years with fortunes in gold. Such was the intention and expectation of Cummins E. Jackson; otherwise he would have disposed of his valuable home property before leaving. Nearly all of these adventurers did return, but many of them without the fortunes. I witnessed on one occasion a gold-hunters' rush. I have never read an account of such a scene that conveyed anything like an adequate description of what it is. The people were not only excited but wild; they rushed night and day; seemingly nothing could control or stop them. Of those who had not the means to procure teams and wagons, some trundled wheelbarrows, others hand carts, all loaded with picks, shovels, provisions, blankets, etc., etc., starting out on a journey of not less than one hundred miles from the last point where supplies were obtainable. Little wonder that in 1849 boys of fifteen and sixteen, and even widows with families of children, joined in the onward rush across the plains for California. It may be proper to state that I resided

for a number of years in the midst of these former fortune hunters, and was often entertained with the narration of their experiences during the period referred to. The following quotations from letters from young Jackson to his sister Laura, written from West Point, the first under date of September 8, 1844, will give a very clear conception of what his home with his Uncle Cummins had been. He writes: "Times are very different from what they were when I was at my adopted home. None to give their mandates; none for me to obey but as I chose; surrounded by my playmates and relatives, all apparently eager to promote my happiness." Again, in a letter to same from Fort Hamilton of date July 6, 1850, he writes that he has received news of his Uncle Cummins' death in California, and says, "*This is news which goes to my heart. Uncle was a father to me.*" And again in a letter to same from Lexington, Va., of date June 5, 1852, he had heard that the report of this uncle's death was incorrect, and that he had returned; he writes: "*To meet him will be a proud day of my life. He has certainly been a good friend to me.*" Unfortunately the first report was correct. It should be borne in mind that the last two quotations given were written by Major Jackson in mature manhood, and after he became an avowed follower of Christ, and will be accepted as his evidence as to what was the man, Cummins E. Jackson. In closing this sketch of the uncle, a few paragraphs will be quoted from a letter received by me from Hon. Henry Brannon of Lewis

County, late Presiding Judge of the Supreme Court of West Virginia. Referring to Cummins E. Jackson, he writes :

"When I went to Weston, Lewis County, a boy of fifteen years, he had only a few years before left that county for California. Though I never knew him, Cummins E. Jackson's name was a household word in Lewis County. I knew a hundred of his close friends and relatives. They have all fallen asleep, and they were leading men and women of the county. They spoke of him so much, so often, that I almost feel that I knew him personally. He was a leading, prominent county man. His heart was big and generous. This told him to give home and shelter to his orphaned nephew, Thomas J. Jackson. Cummins, as everybody called him, was a large, handsome man, firm, courageous and devoted to his friends. He had a valuable landed estate and was loved and respected by all who knew him. Everybody was a friend to Cummins E. Jackson. I can assert this from those who knew him best."

Weston, W. Va., February 12, 1910.

IV

WEST POINT—*Continued* (1842-1846)

RETURNING again to the subject of this sketch, and his admission to the United States Military Academy at West Point. The class he entered was a large and distinguished one. Generals McClellan, Foster, Reno, Stoneman, Couch and Gibbons of the Federal army, and Generals A. P. Hill, Pickett, Maury, D. R. Jones, W. D. Smith, and Wilcox of the Confederate army were among his classmates. He was here brought into competition with some of the brightest and most cultured young men of the nation; and although his training in mathematics had been limited to arithmetic and a few weeks of hurried preparation in algebra, and without any knowledge whatever of the French tongue, he was assigned to the fourth class where he began the study of that language, and of algebra and geometry. At the end of his first year, in a class of seventy-two,¹ he stood forty-five in mathematics, seventy in French, had fifteen demerits, and was fifty-one in general merit." As the predominant question with young Jackson from the time of his appointment had been whether, with his defective preparation, he would be enabled to maintain himself at all in the course of study at

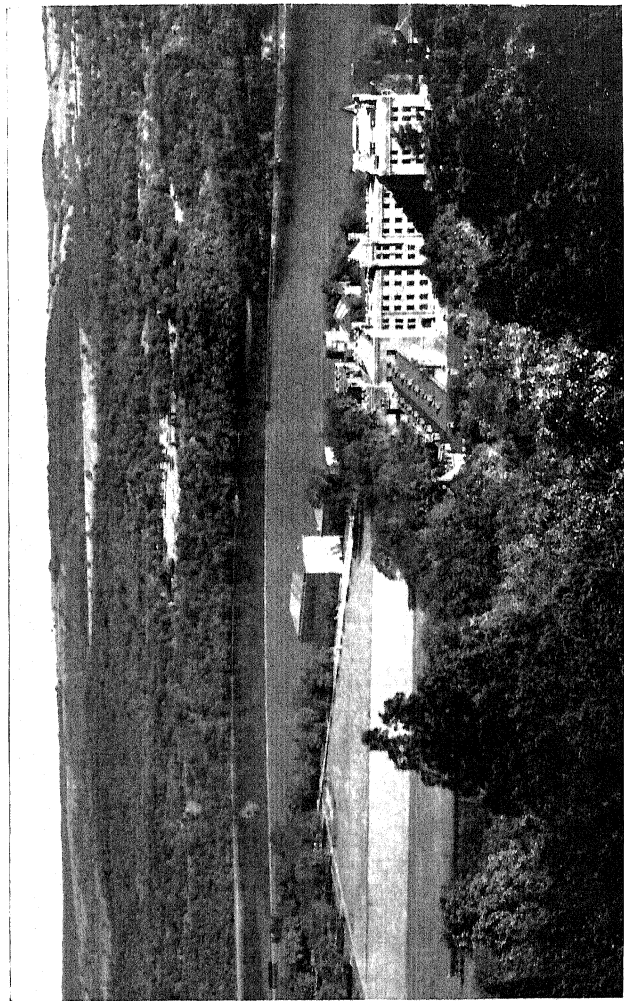
¹ The class of 1842 contained one hundred and nine. Presumably a number were dropped during the year.

West Point, he was more than gratified with the result of the examination in placing him sufficiently high to assure his entry into the next advanced class. And from that time forward he was relieved of any apprehension as to his ability to sustain himself, provided his health did not fail him. While the studies in the next class were much more difficult, yet the effect of the previous year's severe mental training began to be apparent in that at the end of the second year, coupled with his close industry and application, he had risen to eighteen in mathematics, fifty-two in French, was sixty-eight in drawing, and fifty-five in engineering studies, with but twenty-six demerits, and in general merit thirty. While at West Point every little advancement in his studies and class standing was reported to his sister. One can well imagine the pleasure this was to both, and how eagerly the sister would await these, to her, highly flattering reports of her only brother. The latter was ever reticent and modest in speaking or writing of himself, but there was no hesitation when it came to informing his sister of his progress, as appears from his letters to her, knowing as he did the interest she felt in him and the pleasure such information would give her. The first letter of those preserved bears date :

*Military Academy, West Point, N. Y.,
January 28, 1844.*

DEAR SISTER :

It is with pleasure that I embrace this opportunity of informing you of the receipt of your interesting letter,



WEST POINT AND EAST SHORE OF HUDSON RIVER.

which announced to me your own health, as well as that of my friends in general; though you, to my great surprise, did not inform me of your intended home; but I concluded from the general tenor of it that you intended to reside with Uncle S——, of which, if true, I am very glad. My health is far better than it was when I parted with you, and indeed more flattering than it has been for the last two years; and I think by the time I graduate, if that should ever be, my health will be as good as ever. I hope in the meantime that no pains will be spared on your part for the recovery of your health. You should have received a letter from me at an earlier date had it not been for the examination, which was on the eve of commencing when I received yours. The examination closed a few days since, and rather to my advantage, as I rose considerably in mathematics, and a few files in the French language, though in the same time I fell a few files in ethics and in drawing. I passed in all my studies, and I bid fair to continue to do the same for the future. There was only one Virginian found deficient in my class. . . . I am almost homesick, and expect to continue so until I can have a view of my native mountains, and receive the greetings of my friends and relatives, when I shall have the opportunity of mingling with my schoolmates, and the companions of my earliest youth. It is the anticipation of one day realizing them that fills my heart with joy, and causes me to urge forward and grasp that prize which will qualify me for spending my life with them in peace and honor. If no change takes place in the army, and I continue to progress in my class as well as I have so far, my pay when I leave this institution will be about one thousand dollars a year; though fate may decree that I shall graduate in the lower

part of my class, in which case I shall have to go into the infantry and would receive only seven hundred and fifty dollars a year. But I feel very confident that unless fortune frowns on me more than it has yet, I shall graduate in the upper half of my class, and high enough in it to enter the Dragoons. But be that as it may, I intend to remain in the army no longer than I can get rid of it with honor, and means to commence some professional business at home. My friends here are numerous apparently ; and all that I want to render myself happy on earth is the sight of you and my native land. Tell Uncle Cummins if you should see him shortly that I want him to write to me, giving me permission to come home ; for without his consent the superintendent will not give me a furlough ; though if you should not have an opportunity of doing so, you need not mention it to him, for I will write to him if I do not hear from him soon. Give my respects to Seely,¹ if you should see her, and tell her that there is not a day that passes by without my thinking of her, and that I expect to see her in less than five months. Don't forget to write ; and write often. I remain your true and well wishing brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

P. S. I received with much pleasure your letter of January since I wrote the within, and was highly gratified to hear that your health is still improving. You informed me that if I would bring some stuff home that you would make it up for me. That one disposition which you evinced in so doing is worth more to me than any other evidence that you could give to me of a benevolent heart and worthy sister. But I do not wish you to give me

¹ One of his uncle's slaves, who had charge of the household affairs, cooking, etc.

any aid at present, but will feel well satisfied if you can aid your aunt enough to satisfy her for her trouble on your account. I will have to take clothes already made up for a part of my pay, or else not get all my pay until I return from furlough. Things have taken considerable change here since I wrote to you last. I thought then I could spare about ——— dollars, which I intended to expend for you, but I find that I will not have more than ——— dollars or so. Which, as it is so small an amount, I shall bring it to you in money, as I think that you can purchase with it to a better advantage than I can. But if you wish me to bring anything, let me know it, and also the price of it in Beverley, in your next letter; and if I can get it any cheaper here, I will do it with pleasure. I ever remain yours with high esteem. If I had one wish it would be to see you as soon as you will see this.

T. J. J.

*Miss Laura A. Jackson,
Beverley, Virginia.*

As indicated in the preceding letter young Jackson, who was thoroughly homesick, as is clearly apparent, and which fact is convincing evidence of what his home life with his Uncle Cummins had been, obtained his furlough and spent the summer vacation of 1844 in Western Virginia, a portion of the time visiting his sister in Randolph County, and the remainder and principal part at his old home in Lewis County with his Uncle Cummins. His cousin, Mr. Sylvanus White, elsewhere herein quoted from, and who resided with his parents in the vicinity, in referring to this visit writes, "When he (young Jackson) was at home on furlough at the expiration

of his first two years at West Point, he told me how hard his studies were. He said he was only allowed three weeks to learn the English grammar; and if he had failed in that he would have been sent home. 'Oh, I tell you I had to work hard.' I said, 'Would they send for you if you did not go back?' 'Oh, I think not,' he said; 'but not for Lewis County would I fail to go back. I am going to make a man of myself if I live. What I will to do I can do.' One Sunday we went to the Brad Run Baptist Church to services. He—Tom, as he preferred to be called—was riding with Miss Caroline N——; they were crossing the West Fork River at the Wither's ford. The water was two and a half or three feet deep. His horse slipped on the stones and fell so as to throw him in the water. He had on a very fine suit, his cadet uniform. He made no complaint, hardly any remark, but remounted and went on to church. He was the most precise and polite man I ever saw to everybody."

The following letter was written to his sister just after his return to West Point at the expiration of his furlough, the only leave of absence granted him during his four years' course at the academy, and dated :

*West Point Military Academy,
September 8, 1844.*

DEAR SISTER :

You will please to pardon me for not writing to you at an earlier period. It was my desire to have sent you a few lines before returning to this place. . . .

During my furlough I was made an officer, consequently my duties are lighter than usual. . . . (He then proceeds to give his sister the following encouragement.) Be not discouraged by disappointments and difficulties, but on the contrary let each stimulate you to greater exertions for attaining noble ends, and an approving conscience at least will be your reward. My health is as good as usual. Please write to me soon.

Your friend and brother,

THOS. JACKSON.¹

To L. A. Jackson.

Both Dr. Dabney and Colonel Henderson in their sketches of young Jackson's career at West Point make mention that his attainments were not such as to secure him an appointment to any of the offices that were usually filled by cadets. From the above letter it is clearly evident that they were each mistaken in such statement. Furthermore the selection of young Jackson as a cadet officer was made in his absence, and, it would appear, without his knowledge at the time; and as merit and qualifications are the first considerations in the selection of cadets to fill such positions, and in case such requirements are possessed in something like equal degree by two or more, then, as between these, popularity would naturally be the deciding factor, it is only a fair inference that Cadet Jackson was the possessor of each of these several attributes. It will be remembered that in a former letter he makes mention of having many friends among the cadets. In the second class, or

¹ Note the signature. See page 25, and note.

third year, young Jackson entered upon an entirely different course of studies and having finished mathematics, French and English, was soon absorbed in the abstruse subjects of chemistry, optics, mechanics, magnetism and astronomy. The next letter addressed to his sister bears date :

U. S. M. A., February 10, 1845.

DEAR SISTER :

With pleasure I received in your letter the welcome information that you are married¹ and happy in the society of a husband who is entitled to your purest love and most fervent attachment. My sincere desire is that you may both enjoy all the blessings which a bountiful Providence can bestow. I think that if happiness exists in this world, matrimony is one of its principal factors. I conclude that you ought to possess it, inasmuch as you are married, surrounded by your friends and relatives, living near the place of your birth, superior to the wants of life and above all possessing religion. My reason for not writing to you sooner was due to a want of knowledge where to direct a letter, inasmuch as you stated in your first letter that you were then boarding at the hotel and did not mention when you were going to leave nor where you were going to settle. I hope that you shall find no such excuse for not writing to me. You certainly would write much oftener if you only knew the satisfaction which it affords me to read a letter from a sister's hand. You will please direct your subsequent letters to Thos. J. Jackson, for there is some difficulty in obtaining them from the post-office on account of another

¹ His sister had married the latter part of September preceding.

cadet's name being Thos. K. Jackson.¹ I am at present living in a room by myself, my roommate having resigned in consequence of his father's ill health. The weather has been extremely cold and stormy here for the last few days, though at present it is moderating. My studies for the approaching June examination will include optics, mechanics, astronomy, magnetism and chemistry, together with drawing. I expect to commence taking exercises in riding in a day or two. At the last examination I rose in each department of my studies. A few days since I was called upon to pay the last token of respect to a friend and fellow classmate in whom were combined both shining talents and the characteristics of a gentleman: his death was much lamented by his classmates, who a few days subsequent to his death assembled and appointed a committee to attend to the erection of a monument to his memory. My health is at present as good as usual, and I remain your well wishing brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

Then in the next is again mentioned his class standing, dated:

U. S. M. A., May 17, 1845.

DEAR SISTER:

It is through a sense of duty and affection, and not because of any information that I have, which induces me to send you these few lines. The annual examination will commence in about two weeks. It will be honored by the presence of a number of distinguished officers, among whom is Major-General Scott. If fortune should favor me in a degree corresponding to the past, I will

¹May have been the reason for his inserting the name "Jonathan," mentioned at page 25, and note.

have a better standing in my class than I have formerly had. Thus far I have no demerit for the academic year. My health is very good at present, and it was with regret that your last letter brought to me the news of the delicate state of yours ; but I trust that you will again acquire a fine constitution, and that we will both be permitted the pleasure of meeting and enjoying each other's company after so long a separation and so many buffetings of fortune. You stated or intimated in your last letter that the postage was not paid. The fault was the postmaster's. I have never mailed a letter either to you or any other female correspondent without paying the postage, and telling the postmaster to mark it, unless I had marked it myself ; which latter I but seldom do. I am glad that you informed me of it, and hope that you will continue to do so should it again occur. But for the future I shall mark them myself, to be certain that all is right. I wish you to write often ; and in your next let me know who is elected from Lewis (County) to the Legislature, and also the Senator from the District, and the name and terms of the Democratic paper published in Clarksburg, provided you know. Though don't put yourself to any trouble to find out. Write to me soon and believe me your well-wisher, friend and brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

Mrs. L. A. Arnold.

P. S. Last evening there was published at parade an extenuation of absence to F. Britton. I suppose it had reference to Forbes Britton.¹—T. J. J.

The result of the examinations at the close of the year placed young Jackson, who was then in the

¹A former graduate of West Point from Jackson's native county.

second class or third year, as he had anticipated, considerably in advance of his former class standing, viz.: Eleven in natural philosophy, twenty-five in chemistry, fifty-nine in drawing, not a demerit for the year, and in general merit twenty. At this period he had but little idea of following the profession of arms, as may be inferred from a former statement, and as is also evident from the expressions contained in the next letter.

West Point, August 2, 1845.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I am enjoying myself very well, considering that I am deprived of the blessings of a home, the society of the friends of my childhood, the cordial welcome of relatives, and above all the presence of an only sister. Times are far different from what they were when I was at my adopted home ; none to give their mandates ; none for me to obey but as I chose ; surrounded by my playmates and relatives, all apparently eager to promote my happiness ; but those were the days of my youth ; they have been succeeded by days of quite a different aspect ; manhood with all its cares. I have before me two courses, either of which I may choose. The first would be to follow the profession of arms ; the second, that of a civil pursuit, as law. If I should adopt the first I could live independently and surrounded by friends whom I have already made, have no fear of want. My pay would be fixed ; the principal thing I would have to attend to would be futurity. If I adopt the latter I presume that I would still find plenty of friends, but my exertions would have to be great in order to acquire a name. This course is most congenial to my taste, and consequently I expect

to adopt it, after spending a few years in pursuing the former. My standing at present is in drawing fifty-nine, in chemistry twenty-five, in general standing twenty, in philosophy eleven, in conduct one. There are sixty members in my class at present, nineteen above me and forty below me. I purpose coming to see you in July next. A member of the corps was drowned a few days since; his body was recovered about five days subsequent and interred with the honors of war. I had the pleasure of his acquaintance. He was a youth of promise, stood high in his class. The news must have inflicted a sore wound on the hearts of his parents, for he certainly was a favorite child. The corps is at present in mourning for him. There have been a number of distinguished men at the Point for some time back, among whom was Major-General Scott.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

And then :

West Point, U. S. M. A., Nov. 25, 1845.

DEAR SISTER :

It has been but a few moments since I had the pleasure of receiving your affectionate and sister-like letter. As to your health, it is my sincere wish that you may again recover it. My constitution as well as your own has received a severe shock; but I believe I am gradually recovering. My exercises this year with the broadsword as well as the small are well calculated to strengthen the chest and the muscles. So that I have some reason to believe that they will have the desired effect of restoring me to perfect health. And I hope that the same kind Providence, which has preserved us as the remnant of a family up to the present time, will again favor us with an interview, although in Its wisdom

It has marked out for us, at least for a period, widely different spheres of action, and different places of abode. But I look forward with no small degree of satisfaction to the time when my circumstances will allow me to settle down near you, and among my relatives, in order to share with yourselves the ineffable pleasure of domestic circles. For your kind advice and well wishes you have my hearty thanks. Since my last letter I have been transferred to the first section in ethics, and I think I have probably a mark in it which will place me among the first five in my class in this science, and which I consider as preferable to any other in the course. There is a young gentleman here by the name of Withers who is from the South.¹ He has told me that his father was formerly of Virginia, and that he has relatives still living there; and that one of them, who is a doctor, visited his father two or three years since. This youth is an associate of mine, and I would be glad to know whether or no he is a relative, which I could do, probably, if I knew the given name of Dr. Withers of Fauquier, who I know visited the South some time previous to my coming here. If you recollect the time of his passing through Weston, as well as his name, I would be glad if you would let me know in your next letter; but I do not wish to put you to the least trouble to find out, as I can obtain the information otherwise. It is probable you think hard of me because of my not writing more frequently, but I hope *the strict requirement of many duties*, as well as want of information, will prove a partial if not a complete excuse. Give my respects to Mr. A——, and rest assured of my unalterable attachment.

THOS. J. JACKSON.

¹ Mr. John Withers of Mississippi.

And again :

West Point, U. S. M. A., April 23, 1846.

DEAR SISTER :

. . . I am enjoying my usual state of health, and live in anticipation of shortly paying you a visit. Times are here nearly as usual. Of course there is a little excitement owing to the proximity of furlough and graduation. I have been expecting a letter from you in answer to my last, but not knowing what might have occurred I have deemed it best to attempt another, hoping that it will meet with better success than the former. . . . Had I only the memory of our late brother (Warren Jackson), who I hope is at this moment enjoying all the bliss of a celestial world, I could entertain you more interestingly, but as I am deprived of this important faculty to a great extent, my letter must be bereft of interest. . . . Rumor appears to indicate a rupture between our government and the Mexican. If such should be the case the probability is that I will be ordered to join the army of occupation immediately, and, if so, will hardly see home until after my return, and the next letter that you will receive from me may be dated from Texas or Mexico. . . . I shall ever continue to love you with a brother's love.

T. J. JACKSON.

As the postmark of the above letter bears date May 5, 1846, it was evidently commenced and not completed until some two weeks later. "In July, 1846, his class graduated. In the studies of the final year he was twelve in engineering, five in ethics, eleven in artillery, twenty-one in infantry tactics, eleven in

mineralogy and geology, seven demerits for the year, and his graduating standing, including the drawbacks of his previous years, was seventeen." A classmate, General Dabney H. Maury, writes, "There were one hundred and sixty-four members in his class altogether, counting those who had been turned back into it. Sixty graduated." The steady upward progress which characterized young Jackson's academic life from fifty-one in his first year to thirty in his second, then twenty, and finally seventeen in general standing, indicates an abundance of energy, industry, application and ambition. A former graduate, the late General F. H. Smith, writes, "The lesson which his academic career presents is that what he lacked in early previous preparation he made up by extra diligence and unceasing effort, while resolute determination to do his duty caused him to have but forty-eight demerits, notwithstanding the strict discipline of West Point, in a course of four years. It was scarcely possible for a young man to have entered upon a course of studies for which he was less prepared from want of early preparation than he was, but the resolute purpose to accomplish what he had undertaken, and thus to vindicate the confidence of his friends, animated him through all his difficulties, and crowned him with the honors of a graduate and with the commission as a brevet second lieutenant of artillery on the 1st of July, 1846." While at West Point it has been said that the opinion of young Jackson's teachers and comrades was that his mind was sound and strong,

but not quick. This presumably was true at that time in so far as it might be applied to his studies, and probably may have been principally due to previous lack of mental training. His subsequent career would apparently indicate the reverse, for the evidence is conclusive that in action, not only in Mexico, but throughout his career in the Civil War, his mind was unusually quick, clear and active. Notwithstanding the estimate of his teachers and comrades as above quoted, it was unquestionably a common remark among them that if the course at West Point was one year longer, that young Jackson would without doubt graduate at the head of his class.¹ His companions said of him while there that he was not in any sense morose, but reserved to the point of shyness, "fond of animated conversation and of the collision of intellect when alone with one or two of his few intimates, but in a larger circle was a silent interested listener." It is also related of him while there "that one of the most pleasing and noteworthy traits of his nature was his tenderness to the distressed. A case of sickness or bereavement, among the younger cadets especially, awakened all his sympathies." Evidence of this tenderness and sympathy may be gathered from expressions in some of the preceding letters written from the military academy. His was a nature of the deepest sympathy. He was noted for his humility. It is claimed that the former begets the latter. If so, young Jackson was a striking exemplification of its truth.

¹ Colonel Henderson, Dr. Dabney, and others.

V

MEXICO (1846)

THAT the knowledge of the prominent positions filled in time past by so many members of young Jackson's ancestry and family stirred his boyish imagination, and fostered an ambition to distinguish himself, and influenced his conduct, inciting him to still greater achievement can readily be inferred. The possession of this ambition and desire based on such incentive was highly creditable to the orphan boy, mapping out his career in the world with the fixed determination to achieve distinction, to maintain the family name, and to add lustre thereto.

In confirmation of this view as to what were his thoughts and aspirations, the following quotation is given from a letter written by Major Jackson at Fort Meade, Florida, several years later, wherein, referring to a relative, at the time a member of the Virginia Constitutional Convention, then in session at Richmond, he says, "I am much pleased at seeing Cousin William also in the convention." "*Indeed I have some hopes that our ancient reputation may be revived.*"¹ To one fired with a fervent determination to win success and fame, who was so well

¹ Italics not in original.

equipped with untiring energy, industry, and the faculty of close concentration of mind, fortune could hardly have smiled more benignantly than it did upon young Jackson.

Just as he was finishing his four years' course of military training at the United States Academy at West Point, in a letter to his sister dated April 23, 1846, he writes of the expected war with Mexico. He graduated within a few weeks following the beginning of actual hostilities, his class standing being sufficiently high to assure his assignment to the artillery corps of the army, his chosen branch of the service. He had barely time after graduation to make a hurried visit to his sister at Beverley, and to his uncle, Cummins E. Jackson, at his former home. Mention of the latter visit is made in the letter from Mr. Sylvanus White, heretofore quoted, and in which he further writes: "When he (young Jackson) came from West Point in the summer of 1846, while he was here our county militia was called out, with a view of getting up a company of volunteers for the Mexican War. Our Colonel (McKinly) asked him to take command of a company in the day's muster. He (Thomas) said, 'No, I would probably not understand your orders.' But the colonel insisted. When we got on the parade ground, the colonel did not give the proper command, and Tom's company was headed up-town, so he went on, afterwards explaining that he was obeying orders. I volunteered in the company for the Mexican War. He said to me, 'I expect orders any minute to go.

I want to see you at the taking of the city of Mexico. We are going to take it.' We, that is our company, were not called for. In the spring of 1849 our uncle, Cummins E. Jackson, my brother, myself and others started for California."

As young Jackson had anticipated, he shortly received marching orders, requiring him to immediately report for duty with Company K of the First Regiment of Artillery, and which he did, proceeding thence through Pennsylvania, down the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers to New Orleans; and from there the troops embarked for Point Isabel, Texas. In descending the Mississippi River an island was passed, strikingly familiar to young Jackson's gaze as the scene of his first youthful venture to carve his way to fame in the world. The sight doubtless recalled to his memory many incidents of the past, all associated with the loved brother, Warren, since deceased, that had occurred in the winter and spring they had spent there together. And all so at variance with his present surroundings and circumstances. The next intelligence received of young Jackson is from Point Isabel, Texas. In a letter to his sister from that place, dated September 25, 1846, and postmarked New Orleans, he writes as follows :

DEAR SISTER :

I arrived in this port last evening and purposed writing to you before closing my eyes in sleep, but I was prevented from my purpose by the impossibility of procuring a pen. I have availed myself of this opportunity

of writing, in particular as it may be the last favorable one for days to come, as in this country letters are generally transmitted through the kindness of a third person, or the quartermaster. How I shall be able to get this to New Orleans I cannot say, but it must be through one of these channels. There are at present about one hundred vessels in port, some of which I presume will soon sail for New Orleans. It is useless for me to attempt to give a detailed narrative of occurrences since I last parted with you, but suffice it to say that I arrived home (at Cummins E. Jackson's) on the following Monday, and on the succeeding Wednesday received orders to report without delay to Captain Francis Taylor; and on the following day, in compliance with my orders, bid farewell to my uncle's family, and proceeded to Fort Columbus.¹ But on arriving there ascertained that he, Captain Taylor, had left. On receiving this information I proceeded to Fort Hamilton, where I found him. From that post, in connection with Captain Taylor, thirty men and forty horses, I took up my line of march for this place. After travelling upwards of four hundred miles by land we reached Pittsburgh, from thence by water, and have finally arrived here after a march of about thirty-six days. . . . I have not yet landed, but an officer of the quartermaster's department has been aboard, and stated that General Taylor had observed that he would be ready for another battle by yesterday. This news came by letter from Colonel Whiting.² Whether the battle came off or not I cannot say. I belong to K Company, First

¹ Located on Governor's Island, N. Y.

² Years afterwards on the eve of Jackson's departure from the Valley for Richmond, General Whiting, it is said, expressed great indignation at the former's not disclosing to him any of his plans.

Artillery, which, to use the common phrase, is a flying company of artillery. I could say much more, but I am writing in a strong gale of wind, and where all is confusion. I am in hopes of starting up the Rio Grande tomorrow, and on reaching General Taylor as soon as possible. Direct your letter to Company K, First Artillery, Army of Occupation, Mexico. It may reach me, but not with certainty. My health is better than it has been for some time. Give my respects to the good people of Beverley. They occupy a high place in my esteem, especially your amiable husband, whose kindness as well as yours has been indelibly written on my heart and memory.

T. J. JACKSON.

In the period in which the following letters from Mexico were written, young Jackson was some twenty-two years of age. His description of the country, its climate, its products, and its people is interesting, and as is constantly evidenced emanates from the pen of a close observer and accurate writer. Of more than ordinary interest in view of his future achievements are his descriptions of military operations in which he participated. His comments and criticisms on what transpired, and reference to the dissensions occurring and pending between some of the prominent military leaders, was of course personal to his sister. As the persons named have since passed away, and the events are of so long ago as to be all but forgotten, there can be no impropriety in this publicity at the present day. As indicated in the last preceding letter his command was

ordered to report to General Taylor, and thereupon proceeded via Matamoras and Camargo, in the state of Tamaulipas, thence to the city of Monterey, the capital of Nuevo Leon, and from there to Saltillo, the capital of Coahuila. Prior to the battle of Buena Vista, the regular troops, which included Lieutenant Jackson's command, were withdrawn from General Taylor's army and ordered to the mouth of the Rio Grande River, to be transferred from there to Vera Cruz, the new base of operations of General Scott, the commander-in-chief. As stated, shortly after their withdrawal was fought the noted battle of Buena Vista. One can imagine the chagrin and disappointment of the young army officer, eager for battle and longing for an opportunity to distinguish himself, upon receiving news of this great victory gained so soon after his departure from General Taylor's command. General D. H. Hill says that in conversation with Lieutenant Jackson during this period the latter said, " 'I really envy you men who have been in action. *I should like to be in one battle.*' His face lighted up, and eyes sparkled as he spoke, and the shy, hesitating manner gave way to the frank enthusiasm of the soldier." ¹

On the 9th of March the command, numbering 13,500, were disembarked on the beach near Vera Cruz. Jackson frequently afterwards mentioned this as one of the most thrilling spectacles he ever witnessed. By sunset the whole force was paraded on

¹ General Hill's article, "The Real Stonewall Jackson," *Century Magazine* for February, 1894. By permission.

shore in order of battle. The Mexican garrison in the city consisted of 4,000 of all arms, strongly intrenched. The city was formally invested. On March 18th the trenches were completed, the 22d the bombardment was commenced with heavy ordnance, which was followed by the capitulation of the city on the twenty-seventh day of that month and the surrender of the entire garrison, and four hundred cannon. The fall of Vera Cruz was brought about principally by the heavy artillery, and the first regiment was continuously engaged. The American loss was small, numbering but sixty-four killed and wounded. Young Jackson's conduct in this engagement was such as to attract the attention of his superior officers, and a few months later he was promoted to first lieutenant, "for gallant and meritorious conduct at the siege of Vera Cruz." He having been recently—in March—promoted to second lieutenant, though from a statement in his letter of date March 30, 1847, he evidently had not received notice of the promotion. The letter was written from camp near Vera Cruz.

DEAR SISTER:

I now send you the long delayed letter and hope that you will pardon my procrastination. Since I last wrote you I have been at Matamoras, Camargo, Monterey and Saltillo and the intermediate towns. At present I cannot conveniently give you more than a general idea of the portions of Mexico that have fallen under my observation, but hope to do so at some future day when things are more settled than at present. And I also pur-

pose on writing to you more frequently. It would have afforded me much pleasure to have been with the gallant and victorious General Taylor at the battle of Buena Vista, in which he has acquired laurels as imperishable as the history which shall record the invasion of Mexico by our victorious armies; but I was ordered away from Saltillo in January last, and I believe for the best, inasmuch as I am now with the most important portion of the army and on the most important line of operations. I am now encamped on the road leading from Vera Cruz to the city of Mexico. Our troops landed about two miles from the former city on the 9th instant, and on the same night were fired on by the Mexicans. On the following day we commenced surrounding the city and operating against it. The operations after the investment was completed consisted principally in bombarding and cannonading, which were continued until not only the city but the castle of San Juan Dullas agreed to surrender. The capitulation occurred yesterday. The terms are that all of the public property falls into our hands. The troops march out under the condition of not serving against us during the present war unless exchanged. The troops marched out yesterday, and surrendered their arms and we took possession immediately. This capitulation has thrown into our hands the stronghold of this republic, and being a regular siege, in connection with other circumstances must in my opinion excel any military operations known in the history of our country. I approve of all except allowing the enemy to retire; that I cannot approve of, inasmuch as we had them secure, and could have taken them prisoners of war unconditionally. Our loss is not accurately known, nor that of the enemy as yet, but in my estimation ours cannot exceed

twenty men in killed.¹ We lost two captains: Captain Vinton of the Artillery, and Captain Alburtis of the Infantry. I have been in the city and was much surprised at its strength. It is surrounded on the land side by a wall about ten feet high and a series of forts, and on the other side is protected by the castle. You asked me whether I belonged to General Worth's division. I had the honor of being in it, so long as it existed, but it has been broken up. During the past siege I was part of the time with him, and part of the time with General Twiggs. While I was at the advanced batteries, a cannon ball came in about five steps of me. I presume you think my name ought to appear in the papers, but when you consider the composition of our army, you will entertain a different view; it is such that only those who have independent commands are as a general rule spoken of; for instance Ridgely, May, Bragg, Duncan, Ringold, Smith all commanded companies.² If an officer wishes to distinguish himself he must remain long in service until he obtains rank; then he receives praise not only for his efforts, but for the efforts of the officers and men under him. That portion of the praise which may be due to me must of course go to those above me, or be included in the praise given to the army. I expect to remain in Mexico for the remainder of the war, and to move forward with the leading brigade. I expect to be promoted in a short time to a second lieutenancy; this will probably occasion me to leave the light battery, but it will give me more rank, which is of the greatest importance in the army. Remember me in the warmest terms to Mr. Arnold and

¹ Sixty-four killed and wounded.

² See page 93. Probably one reason for desiring service with Magruder.

all my other friends. I hope soon to march forward towards the city of Mexico. Vera Cruz continues healthy. I intend writing soon and more frequently, but my means of writing are poor. I am now using a box for a chair and my camp bedstead as a writing desk and think myself comfortably situated. You have all of the conveniences necessary, and I hope that you will use them to write often to one who esteems you above all. You will take particular care that neither this nor any subsequent letter gets into a newspaper.

After the battle of Vera Cruz General Scott advanced to Cerro Gordo, a few miles east of Jalapa where General Santa Anna with 13,000 men and forty-two pieces of artillery occupied a very strong position completely commanding the great national highway leading to the city of Mexico. After a careful reconnaissance, Captain Robert E. Lee, of Scott's staff, submitted to the Commander-in-Chief a plan for a flank movement, that would be hidden from the view of the enemy, at the western extremity of the latter's position, which, if occupied by the Americans, would not only enable them to assail Santa Anna from an unexpected quarter on the right and turn his position, but would completely command their only line of retreat, the whole front of the enemy to be threatened and pressed during the attack. This plan was adopted, and the construction of a rough road commenced and completed the third day, by which the infantry, under command of General Twiggs, who had been assigned to the duty, strongly supported by artillery, and by Brigadier-

General Shields with his brigade, were enabled to march around to strike the enemy in the rear and right. The attack was made in the early morning of April 18th and was a complete surprise to the enemy and a brilliant success, his right being rolled back in confusion on his centre. Pillow had assailed his left, and although being twice repulsed, and unsuccessful, served to distract and occupy the Mexicans. In this battle the first artillery regiment had fought as infantry. The Mexican loss in this engagement is placed at 1,200 killed and wounded, 3,000 prisoners, and all of their artillery. The American army numbered about 8,500. Their loss was sixty-three killed and 368 wounded—431, including two generals. They pressed forward with unabated enthusiasm, giving neither halt nor rest to the enemy.

The immediate results of this important battle were the occupation of Jalapa the next day, the abandonment of the works and artillery at La Hoya, and the occupation by Worth's division of the powerful fortress and town of Perote with fifty-four guns, and immense supplies of ammunition, followed by the occupation, on May 15th, of the city of La Puebla, eighty-five miles distant from the capital of Mexico, without a shot being fired. Immediately following the occupation of Jalapa, young Jackson writes to his sister as follows :

Jalapa, Mexico, April 22, 1847.

DEAR SISTER :

I promised in my last that I would give you a more detailed account of Mexico in a subsequent letter.

I will now endeavor to comply with that promise. In doing so I will first state in general terms that the portion of northern Mexico which has fallen under my observation is mostly a vast barren waste, cities excepted. There are but two seasons in Mexico, wet and dry. In consequence of the drought there is but little vegetation in the north. A person travelling through this sterile portion of country would not suppose the inhabitants would be able to pay their taxes. In the cities it is different; there wealth is frequently found. One person residing in Saltillo is said to own a larger area of land than the state of New York. Passing to the south the aspect of things change. You frequently see elegant buildings. The country General Santa Anna owns between this place and Vera Cruz contains three beautiful houses and a tract of land about fifty-five miles in length. The country in the south is very similar to our own. Whilst I was in Monterey my quarters were in the outskirts of the city, having a large back lot attached, which contained a beautiful orange orchard. Also in this lot was a fine bathing establishment, the pool being about twenty-five by thirty feet. Monterey is the most beautiful city which I have seen in the north of this distracted country. About sixty miles farther west is Saltillo, the capital of Coahuila. It is situated about two thousand feet above the level of Monterey on an inclined plane at the edge of the tablelands. The houses are generally built of sun-dried brick, as are most of the houses in that region. The church is the most highly ornamented in the interior of any edifice which has ever come under my observation. Upon entering the magnificent structure we are struck with the gaudy appearance on every side, but most especially the opposite end from the entrance, which appears to be gilded.

At the base is a magnificent silver altar, and on each side are statues which cannot fail to attract the attention of the astonished beholder. The music is of the highest character. The priests are robed in the most gorgeous apparel. The inhabitants take off their hats on approaching the church and do not replace them until they have passed it. One day whilst I was near the building I observed a señora (lady) gradually approaching the door. Upon another occasion I saw a female looking at a statue and weeping like a child. After obtaining a limited transportation for General Twiggs' division, it set forward for Jalapa on the road leading to the city of Mexico. But on arriving at near Cerro Gordo we learned that General Santa Anna held the pass in force. Consequently we waited for reinforcements, which finally arrived, and on the 17th instant we attacked the Mexicans, but did not succeed in routing them completely until the 18th, when we took some thousands of prisoners and completely routed the remainder. We followed close on the retreating column until night and came near enough to give them a few shots from the battery, but they succeeded in effecting their escape for want of our dragoons. General Scott, after disarming the prisoners, allowed them to retire and released the officers on parole. But General La Vega, who is again our prisoner, refused to accept of his, and I presume he will be sent back to the United States. Our loss has been considerable, but not known; neither is the Mexican.¹ General Santa Anna escaped, but in his haste left us his carriage and wooden leg, together with some thousands of dollars in specie. General Twiggs' division fought the battle. General

¹ The Mexican loss was 1,200 killed and wounded, 3,000 prisoners and 43 pieces of artillery. The American loss was 63 killed and 368 wounded.

Worth has again got a division, but he did not get it into action owing to its being used as a reserve, and General Twiggs' as the advance. Captain Taylor in his report to General Twiggs has spoken of me in very flattering terms. I am now in Jalapa, which is situated about sixty miles from Vera Cruz and one hundred and ninety-five from the city of Mexico. General Worth is now in advance, and if there is any fighting at Perote he will be apt to distinguish himself. He will probably be in the vicinity of Perote to-morrow at farthest and possibly to-day. It is rumored here that the Mexicans are fortifying their capital; if so, then we may have the grand battle there. A Mexican officer came here last evening from the city of Mexico and stated that his father had written to him from San Luis¹ stating that General Taylor was there and had met with no opposition. I can say no more, as I have just learned that the escort by which I wish to send this has started and I must mount my horse and overtake it or miss a good opportunity. I am in better health than usual.

At the time when the next letter was written, it is evident that young Jackson was experiencing the keenest mortification. He had already suffered intense disappointment in being ordered away from General Taylor just on the eve, as it were, of the battle of Buena Vista. He had been looking forward, no doubt with anticipated pleasure, to his promotion to a second lieutenancy, although knowing that it would more than likely occasion his transfer from Captain Taylor's company, to whom he was much attached, to some other. Immediately follow-

¹ Presumably San Luis Potosi.

ing his promotion he not only was transferred, as he had feared, to a battery of heavy artillery, but this was followed by an order that seemed to mean the complete demolition of all of his dreams of advancement, and opportunity to win distinction and fame, issued by General Scott, assigning him with his new company of heavy guns to garrison duty at Jalapa while the victorious army moved forward on the highway leading to the city of Mexico. That he exhausted every influence in his effort to avert this seeming calamity is clearly manifest, but without avail. The letter is as follows :

Jalapa, May 25, 1847.

LOVELY SISTER :

I have the mortification of being left to garrison the town of Jalapa. Captain Taylor used his influence to keep me with him, in which event I should have gone forward. But Colonel Childs, who was made Military Governor of this place, got General Scott to issue an order requiring me to join my company which was under the command of the Governor. Notwithstanding my present situation I have some hope of getting forward by and by, when more troops get in from the States. But all this is with General Scott. I throw myself into the hands of an all wise God, and hope that it may yet be for the better. It may have been one of His means of diminishing my excessive ambition ; and after having accomplished His purpose, whatever it may be, He then in His infinite wisdom may gratify my desire. The army was to move at the time which I mentioned. But General Scott concluded to disband the volunteers, as their time had nearly expired. And this so much di-

minished our force that we delayed the advance until a couple of days since. General Scott left on Sunday with an escort, following in the wake of his troops. General Worth has been in Puebla for about ten days. Santa Anna marched from Orizaba and commenced fortifying about half-way between the cities of Puebla and Mexico ; but owing to some cause he relinquished it, and marched into the capital, left the army, and is now in the Presidential chair. As to his motives I cannot say anything certain, but I suppose that he thinks that his influence will be more powerful there than elsewhere. . . . An election was held on the 15th instant for President, and Herrera was the successful candidate, but will not take his seat for a few months yet. I am in fine quarters and making rapid progress in the Spanish language, and have an idea of making some lady acquaintances shortly. I see many things here of interest in the way of ornament and fruits. I wish that I only had an opportunity of sending some to you and Thomas. I well know that he would like to have a "ranchero" (Mexican) on horse-back, followed by some large dogs.¹ I would be much pleased to hear from Wirt, poor fellow.² Give my respects to your estimable husband. I think of you often, and my heart has more than once upbraided me for my neglect of you. But I feared to inform you of things as they were. . . .

Your brother always,

T. J. JACKSON.

Remember me to the worthy people of Beverley and to my relatives in the vicinity.

T. J. J.

Postmarked New Orleans, June 8th.

¹ Toys of Mexican manufacture.

² His half-brother, who was in delicate health.

VI

MEXICO—*Continued* (1846–1848)

IT may be readily imagined that young Jackson availed himself of every possible opening discernible in his efforts to extricate himself from his unfortunate predicament, and that he kept his friends actively on the alert to aid him in every conceivable way. It so happened that, in the recent battles, Captain John B. Magruder had captured a light field battery, which General Scott presented to him as a reward for his conspicuous gallantry. There was a vacancy in the second lieutenancy in this battery. It was claimed that the young officers disliked to serve under Magruder ; that he was not only inclined to keep his men in a constant state of unrest, but that he was unusually hot-tempered. Jackson, upon being informed of this vacancy, at once applied for and succeeded in securing the position, and was subsequently transferred to that company. In later years he said, "I wanted to see active service, to be near the enemy in the fight ; and when I heard that John Magruder had got his battery, I bent all my energies to be with him ; for I knew if any fighting was to be done Magruder would be on hand."¹ From this time until after the capitulation of the city of Mexico he served with

¹ Dabney.

Magruder, and evidently not only to the entire satisfaction of that dashing and gallant officer, but in a manner to command the latter's highest admiration and esteem. And this feeling must have been mutual, as he later chose young Jackson as his closest friend to be the bearer of a challenge to General (afterwards President) Pierce.¹

At the date when young Jackson was assigned to the position above referred to, Magruder with his company was in advance with the army, under General Scott, on the road leading to the city of Mexico, Jackson, as stated, being on garrison duty at Jalapa. Upon receiving the order to report to Captain Magruder for duty, Lieutenant Jackson, in company with a small escort, at once set forth in the wake of General Scott's army, with the view of overtaking and joining his new command as speedily as possible. At that period there were scattered throughout this section of Mexico numerous small detachments from the recently defeated army of Santa Anna, besides bands of marauders and Mexican guerrillas, sufficiently numerous and in large enough force to make travelling very hazardous for any small detachments of Americans who might be out of sight of, or have occasion to be separated from, the main army of occupation. Lieutenant Jackson encountered several of these bands while on this march and on one occasion, at least, the enemy was in sufficient force to encourage

¹ "The Real Stonewall Jackson," General D. H. Hill, in the *Century Magazine* of February, 1894.

them to assail this small isolated squad, with the supposed certainty of its destruction. The hand-to-hand combat was of short duration, however, and resulted in the complete discomfiture of the Mexicans, who were put to flight with the loss of four killed and three captured, the remainder effecting their escape.

Dr. Dabney in writing of the light artillery says, "The rapid manœuvring of light artillery in action was a new feature in American warfare. Its brilliant results at Palo Alto, at Resaca de la Palma, at Buena Vista, had delighted General Taylor, and electrified the country. Jackson foresaw that this arm of warfare was henceforth destined to be used in every battle, and to be always thrust forward to the post of danger and of honor. To a soul thirsting, like his, for distinction, this was motive enough for preferring it. And he said that, determined as he was to do his whole duty, and to consecrate himself wholly to his functions as a soldier, he had no fears of being unable to satisfy the rigidity of its captain. In this he was not disappointed."

It is evident from the foregoing that several reasons influenced Jackson to apply for a transfer to Magruder's company, viz., first, Believing that in service under that dashing officer, with his battery of light artillery, the chances of getting into battle and winning fame would be greatly enhanced. Second, That being an independent company, the officers thereof would receive personal credit for whatever the company accomplished, as distinguished from a regiment of regulars, where what reputation

was gained would be bestowed in the usual manner upon the commanding officer.¹ Third, To get free from garrison duty, and into active service. The latter, without doubt, was the prime factor in causing him to so eagerly seek a transfer to Magruder's company. And, in his own opinion, his Creator, having sufficiently punished him for his inordinate ambition, crowned his efforts with success in permitting him to obtain service in that company, which of all others, as it subsequently transpired, afforded the best opportunity for his attaining advancement and fame.² The American army remained at Puebla from the time of entry, May 15th, until early in August. This long delay was occasioned by having to await the arrival of reinforcements.

It seems that several regiments of volunteers which had enlisted for but a brief service had grown tired of war and clamored for their discharge. Finally, with a force of somewhat less than 13,000 of all arms, not including 1,300 effectives and convalescents left as a garrison at Puebla, General Scott, early in August, moved out from the latter city on the road leading to the capital. He had organized this force into four divisions : the first under Major-General Worth, whose command some time before had been broken up by transfer of troops ; the second under Major-General Twiggs ; the third under Major-General Pillow, to which division Magruder's battery was assigned ; the fourth under Major-General

¹ See letter of March 30, 1847, p. 85.

² See letter of October 26, 1847, p. 128.

Pierce, the last being composed principally of volunteers and marines. There were in addition four field batteries, a brigade of cavalry and a few pieces of heavier ordnance suitable for siege operations. In the meantime General Santa Anna had reorganized his army, estimated at 30,000, and with a large number of heavy batteries was now prepared to meet the Americans. The latter after leaving Puebla, on the 10th of August, crossed the Rio Frio Mountains, the pass being at an altitude of 10,000 feet, and in descending the western slope of which obtained their first view of the magnificent capital city and surrounding valley in the distance. They encountered no serious obstacle in their line of march until within some eight or ten miles of the city of Mexico, at the mountain ridge of El Peñon, which for some distance encircles the great basin, in the centre of which the city is located. This ridge and Mexicalcingo to the left of it were so strongly fortified that it was clearly apparent to General Scott that to attempt to force his way through either of the seemingly possible approaches could only be accomplished at a very great sacrifice to his army. He thereupon fell back a short distance to Ayotla. The Commander-in-Chief was ably assisted by an exceptionally brilliant staff of engineers, presumably of his own choosing, viz. : Robert E. Lee, George B. McClellan, P. G. T. Beauregard and Gustavus W. Smith. Lee was the eldest and most experienced, and was deservedly held in high esteem in the confidence of his general. These engineers demon-

strated to Scott that by marching to the left a road might be opened with considerable labor across a rough volcanic country, seamed with ravines, but over which it was possible to transport artillery, that would bring them to the southwest of the city, thus rendering valueless the formidable barriers and fortifications erected by the Mexicans at El Peñon and Mexicalcingo. Approving the proposed plan, and leaving Twiggs' division at Ayotla to threaten the Mexican front and deceive the enemy as long as practicable, after a very tedious and roundabout march of some thirty miles, the village of San Augustin, on the great road leading to the city from the south, was reached, and headquarters established there, only some eight miles southwest of the city. No serious opposition from the Mexicans was encountered on the flank march. Across the road to the north of San Augustin, to which the Mexican commander had hastily transferred his army, were formidable lines of fortifications, supported by heavy guns. To the east of this road was an impassable morass and lake. To the west extending for several miles to the mountains in the direction of Magdalena was a barren stretch covered with sharp rocks and innumerable deep fissures over which neither horse nor vehicle, it was supposed, could pass, known as the Pedregal.

The engineers again seemed equal to the occasion. A bridle path was discovered by Captain Lee leading across this waste. Protected by a strong escort it was rapidly converted into a passable road,

over which Pillow's and Worth's divisions, with Magruder's light battery, crossed. At the western extremity of the Pedregal was another magnificent road leading to the capital from the southwest ; and by following this road the position of the Mexican army could be assailed from the rear. The flanking force came in view of this highway at a point some fourteen miles southwest of the city, only to discover that this road as well as its approaches from the Pedregal was protected by a division of some 6,000 Mexicans under the command of General Valencia, strongly entrenched and supported by twenty-two pieces of artillery in position on a seemingly inaccessible foot-hill of the mountain range, extending along the west side of the road. The further progress of the Americans was completely checked. About three o'clock in the afternoon a brigade, supported by Magruder's battery, occupied the summit of a hill within half a mile of the enemy's breastworks. Magruder immediately unlimbered and opened fire, under protection of which the infantry advanced. But the Mexican artillery was far superior both in number and metal and completely swept the ground in front. For three hours the battle continued, the Americans making no impression. On the right, however, with extreme difficulty they succeeded in crossing a small spur of the Pedregal, covered with dense chaparral, and occupied the village of Contreras. General Scott in commenting on the battle said, "The infantry could not advance in column without being mowed down by grape and canister ;

nor advance in line without being ridden down by the enemy's numerous horsemen." The Mexicans made several charges with infantry and cavalry, but were each time repulsed. Darkness ended the combat. The situation was anything but encouraging to the invaders. Strong reinforcements of Mexicans were advancing from the city; the remainder of the American army was with General Scott on the east side of the Pedregal, five miles distant. The rain poured down in torrents, completely drenching the men. A charge having been made by a Mexican battalion, General Pillow withdrew Magruder's battery from the ridge, the first lieutenant, Johnstone, and some fifteen gunners having already fallen. The Mexican reinforcements referred to, advancing from the city, had halted, their advance guards being only a few hundred yards north of Contreras. The prospect of success looked gloomy. A council of war was called, the situation fully discussed, and the following course agreed upon: two regiments to be left at Contreras under General Cadwallader with the design of holding the large body of reinforcements in check, and a night flank march to be made in an attempt to assail the rear of the intrenchments on the ridge. Robert E. Lee has always been accredited with having devised and suggested the plan successfully adopted. The council was brought to a close and Lee immediately departed through the rain alone over the dangerous Pedregal road to submit the proposed plan to General Scott. He reached Scott's headquarters at eleven o'clock that

night, and urged that a powerful diversion towards morning be directed at the centre of the enemy's intrenched camp. This hazardous journey won from his chief the compliment of being "the greatest feat of physical and moral courage performed by any individual during the entire campaign."

Lee, accompanied by General Twiggs, was sent at once to collect the forces about San Augustin with which to make the diversion. The flank movement was made by a night march, starting at three o'clock A. M., under the guidance of Beauregard, Smith and others, directed towards the enemy's left, over almost impassable ground. They selected a position within five hundred yards of the Mexican intrenchments, and awaited for day. At sunrise they charged, carrying the works in a rush. Cadwallader not only successfully diverted the enemy as directed, but simultaneous with the attack in the rear, assailed with a part of his force under Colonel Ransom, conducted by Lee, the enemy's front, pouring destructive volleys into their works. The enemy attacked in front and rear at the same time was completely routed. The Americans had 4,500 engaged; their loss did not exceed fifty.¹ The Mexican loss was placed at 800, and about that number of prisoners. The enemy's reinforcements were unable to intervene, being held in check by General Shields, who had remained at Contreras; they retreated towards the city after the repulse. The manœuvring of the American army at Contreras has been remarked

¹ Scott's "Memoirs."

upon as probably the best example of the art of strategy occurring throughout the campaign, combined with indefatigable energy and perseverance, and which was supplemented with a cheerful and ready response from the soldiery. When all was in readiness the work was undertaken and completed within a remarkably short time. The Mexicans were given no respite; they were pressed incessantly, and kept on the run, all joining in the pursuit. General Scott after giving the necessary orders went forward with General Pillow's column. Among the captures were two six-pounders previously taken by the Mexicans from the fourth artillery at Buena Vista. Santa Anna, realizing that his communications between San Antonio and the city were in immediate danger, ordered that post to be abandoned and the garrison to fall back to Churubusco, towards which stronghold the Mexicans were being hotly pursued.

At the hacienda of Churubusco was the strongly fortified church or convent of San Pablo, which Twiggs with a brigade and battery was ordered to attack. Pierce at the same time was sent to attack the right and rear in order to aid the movement against the convent and cut off retreat. Shields was directed to follow Pierce. The Americans assailed the position in force before the Mexicans could gain time to rally from the confusion incident to their retreat. After a hot fight of several hours, in which the artillery played a conspicuous part, the Mexicans having been beaten back in a sortie, a general assault was ordered along the whole line, resulting so

successfully that signals of surrender were displayed from the convent, and the defeat of the entire army effected, which was followed by their precipitate flight to the city, with the Americans in close pursuit, their cavalry in the lead, with drawn sabres assailing the demoralized soldiery, almost to the gates of the city. The Mexican loss was 3,000 prisoners, 3,250 killed and wounded, thirty-seven guns and a large supply of ammunition. The American loss was 1,053. In the two days' fighting Jackson's section of three guns, to the command of which he had succeeded in the first day's battle at Contreras, when Lieutenant Johnston fell, had been handled with such skill as to command the highest admiration of his immediate commander. Magruder in his official report states,¹ "In a few moments Lieutenant Jackson, commanding the second section of the battery, who had opened fire upon the enemy's works from a position on the right, hearing our fire still further in front, advanced in handsome style, and kept up the fire with great briskness and effect. His conduct was equally conspicuous during the whole day, and I cannot too highly commend him to the major-general's favorable consideration." For his gallantry on this occasion young Jackson was honored with the brevet rank of captain of artillery.

It would seem that the American vim had been expended, and that they were now to experience a reaction. In the two days' fighting of August 19th and 20th, the Mexicans had met with two disastrous

¹ Referring to Contreras.

defeats, in each of which they had sustained heavy losses in men and munitions of war. Both the army and civilians were panic stricken. Yet General Scott knowing that the larger portion of his army had been in constant marching or hard fighting for two consecutive days, and had passed the intervening night without rest, drenched with rain, executing a difficult flank march between the hours of three o'clock in the night and break of day, resulting in the victory of Contreras, the immediate pursuit of the enemy without rest or intermission to Churubusco, and had there, after a most stubborn resistance, defeated the entire army of Santa Anna, were absolutely exhausted and required rest. He further realized what an accident or mistake would mean to a small army of some 8,000 at the gates of the capital of a hostile country, virtually cut off from any line of retreat. Instead of pressing forward and possibly encompassing the immediate downfall of the city, he adopted the more prudent and safe course. He believed with sound reason that with such an experience the enemy was in a condition to sue for peace, and thus avert unnecessary bloodshed. With this very natural conclusion he proposed an armistice with the purpose of negotiating a peace. He had not, however, in doing this reckoned with Santa Anna's personal ambition. The armistice was agreed to, and of which it is claimed that Santa Anna availed himself to reorganize his demoralized soldiery and strengthen his fortifications. When this was attained, he felt in a position to confront the

Americans. Scott's terms were rejected. The city was still to be won only by much hard fighting. On September 5th the contest was renewed. In the early morning of the 8th the fortifications of Molino del Rey, consisting of a massive series of buildings, originally a flour mill, afterwards converted into a foundry for the manufacture of arms, but now garrisoned by the most seasoned veteran Mexican troops, was assaulted. The fighting was desperate ; 800 Americans were killed or wounded before the intrenchments were finally carried. The Mexicans lost 3,000 and two generals. In this affair Jackson was assigned to protect the flank of the force engaged from the Mexican cavalry, which he did with good effect in some well-directed shots. Although driven from their outworks, the enemy had fallen back to the more formidable palace of Chapultepec, a half mile distant, located on an isolated eminence some one hundred and fifty feet high, being a strongly fortified citadel crowning the hill, designed so as to command the highway leading to the city. Its approaches were protected by outworks both at its base and on its acclivities. This castle was the National Military School ; and in addition to the cadets then in attendance, was strongly garrisoned with their choicest soldiery. The occupancy of Chapultepec was considered indispensable to the capture of the city. It was regarded as being well-nigh impregnable. Scott determined to carry it by storm. To make the attack a brigade of infantry supported by batteries was placed near the southern

gates of the city and kept up a continuous fire throughout the 12th and to the afternoon of the 13th of September, forcing the enemy to remain within the walls of the city, and thus holding a large part of the Mexican army on the defensive. The night of the 11th four batteries of heavy guns were placed within easy range. Throughout the 12th and the morning of the 13th a heavy fire was directed against the castle and outworks. Covered by this fire, Pillow shortly after eight o'clock, supported by Worth, assailed the fortress on the west and north. Simultaneously Quitman, supported by part of Twiggs' division, attacked from the southeast, the batteries throwing shot and shell upon the enemy over the heads of the attacking columns. The fourteenth infantry, under Colonel Trousdale, was stationed so as to form a connecting link between Pillow and Worth, and to do so occupied a road skirting the base of the hill. While at Molino del Rey Jackson's duty consisted in holding off the cavalry while the fight was in progress, Magruder's battery being under Pillow. At Chapultepec, however, Jackson's section was segregated from the battery and he was ordered to support this connecting link. He had been pushed forward with his section by Colonel Trousdale into a position of great danger. And now quoting from Colonel Henderson's "Stonewall Jackson":

"The ground was so marshy that the guns were unable to leave the road. A Mexican field-piece, covered by a breastwork, raked the causeway from

end to end, while from the heights of Chapultepec cannon of large calibre poured down a destructive fire. The infantry suffered terribly. It was impossible to advance along the narrow track; and when the guns under Jackson were ordered up, the situation was in no way bettered. Nearly every horse was killed or wounded. A deep ditch, cut across the road, hindered effective action, and the only position where reply to the enemy's fire was possible lay beyond this obstacle. Despite the losses of his command, Jackson managed to lift one gun across by hand, but his men became demoralized. They left their posts. The example of their lieutenant walking up and down on the shot-swept road, and exclaiming calmly, 'There is no danger; see, I am not hit,' failed to inspire them with confidence. Many had already fallen. The infantry with the exception of a small escort, which held its ground with difficulty, had disappeared; and General Worth, observing Jackson's perilous situation, sent him orders to retire. He replied it was more dangerous to withdraw than to stand fast, and if they would give him fifty veterans, he would rather attempt the capture of the breastwork.¹ At this juncture Magruder, losing his horse as he galloped forward, reached the road. The ditch was crowded with soldiers; many wounded, many already dead, many whose hearts had failed them. Beyond, on

¹Jackson says he asked for a company of regulars. Upon which Worth moved forward a whole brigade. See letter of October 26, 1847, p. 130.

the narrow causeway, the one gun which Jackson had brought across the ditch was still in action. Deserted by his gunners, and abandoned by the escort which had been ordered to support him, the young subaltern still held his ground. With the sole assistance of a sergeant, of stauncher mettle than the rest, he was loading and firing his solitary field-piece, rejoicing, as became the son of a warrior race, in the hot breath of battle, and still more in the isolation of his perilous position. To stand alone, in the foreground of the fight, defying the terrors from which others shrank, was the situation which of all others he most coveted ; and under the walls of Chapultepec, answering shot for shot and plying sponge and hand-spike with desperate energy, the fierce instincts of the soldier were fully gratified. Nor was Magruder the man to proffer prudent counsels. A second gun was hoisted across the ditch ; the men rallied, the Mexican artillery was gradually overpowered, and the breast-work stormed." The enemy were driven from their intrenchments at the foot of the hill and a charge was ordered. "A redoubt which stood midway up the height was carried ; the Mexicans fell back from shelter to shelter." The scaling ladders were brought into use. The enemy assailed in front and flank drew back and after a short struggle the American flag was displayed from the castle. "The greater portion of the garrison had fled from their intrenchments before the castle had been stormed. Infantry, cavalry and artillery were crowding in

panic on the causeways. But their numbers were formidable, and the city, should the army be rallied, was capable of a protracted defense." "Many of the stormers had dispersed in search of plunder, and regiments and brigades had become hopelessly intermingled. Still the pursuit was prompt towards the San Cosme gate." "Jackson's guns were soon abreast of the fighting line. His teams had been destroyed by the fire of the Mexican batteries; those of his ammunition waggon further to the rear had partially escaped." "To disengage the dead animals from the limbers and replace them by others would have wasted many minutes, and he had eagerly suggested to Magruder that the guns should be attached to the wagon limbers instead of to their own. Permission was given, and in a few moments his section was thundering past the cliffs of Chapultepec. Coming into action within close range of the flying Mexicans, every shot told on their demoralized masses.¹ But before the San Cosme gate the enemy made a last effort to avert defeat. Fresh troops were brought up to man the outworks; the houses and gardens which lined the road were filled with skirmishers; from the high parapets of the flat housetops a hail of bullets struck the head of the pursuing column. Again and again the American infantry, without cover, and with little space for movement, recoiled from the attack."²

The assaulting column at Chapultepec consisted

¹ See letter of Mr. Sylvanus White, p. 177.

² Henderson's "Jackson."

of two hundred and sixty regulars under Captain McKenzie, second artillery, assigned to General Pillow; Twiggs supplied a like number to General Quitman under Captain Casey, second infantry, all of whom volunteered for the work. The officers were promised promotion, the men pecuniary reward.¹ Pillow upon emerging from a grove filled with sharp-shooters was seriously wounded, General Cadwallader taking his place. The scaling of the heights was done with such a rush that the enemy was not given time to fire a single mine without endangering the lives of their own men. General D. H. Hill, who was then a lieutenant, and in the pursuit from Chapultepec to the gate of San Cosme, relates the following incident: That in the chase he and Lieutenant Barnard E. Bee were overtaken by Jackson with two pieces of artillery. Captain Magruder soon after overtook them with caissons and men, but no additional guns. Magruder expressed a fear of losing the two guns, as the division of Worth was far in the rear; but he yielded to the solicitations of the young men, and continued the pursuit. General Amphibia with a brigade of cavalry threatened a charge. The guns were immediately unlimbered and opened a rapid fire which speedily dispersed them. In reading the above account it is somewhat amusing to think of these three ambitious young subalterns, each in quest of fame, seeking all the glory to be gleaned on that field, jointly imploring a hothead like Magruder not to

¹ On the authority of General D. H. Hill.

hold back Jackson's guns from the pursuit. From all accounts of Magruder, as given by his intimate personal friends, it certainly would be a reckless, haphazard venture where it would be found at all necessary to importune him to be not over-cautious. Of the three young lieutenants named, each was brevetted twice for gallantry in Mexico, an unusual distinction. Jackson and Hill afterwards became brothers-in-law, and each lived to attain the rank of lieutenant-general in the Confederate army. Of the lamented Bee, who fell at the first great battle of the Civil War while in the act of rallying his brigade, and just before receiving the mortal wound, he conferred upon Jackson the sobriquet "Stonewall," by which he has become known the world over. During the day of Chapultepec Lieutenant Hill remarked to Bee: "If all turns out well to-day, the old state will remember us." The prediction was fulfilled when later, by a resolution of the Legislature, South Carolina presented to each, Hill and Bee, for their conspicuous gallantry on this occasion beautiful gold mounted swords of honor. Notwithstanding the brilliant victory of Chapultepec, the army was not yet safe. Since leaving Puebla General Scott had lost nearly 3,000 officers and men; deducting the losses and the unfit for duty, his army aggregated only some 7,000 effectives.¹

The greater portion of the Mexican army was still with Santa Anna. The city could be easily de-

¹ Scott reports loss of 862 at Chapultepec.

fended. All of the numerous public edifices, churches, etc., were of that massive construction so common in all Spanish American countries. The city, containing some 180,000 population, was encircled with walls, and beyond the walls, ditches and a deep canal. A defeat to the American army would mean ruin. The only possible hope in such an event would be to cut their way through to Puebla, a distance of eighty-five miles. The defense was so obstinate that the pioneers were ordered up, and a passage forced from house to house with picks and crowbars. The guns battered the masonry at close range. By eight o'clock in the evening the Americans had succeeded in entering both the San Cosme and the Belen gates. The Mexican troops retreated during the night, and the white flag was displayed from the citadel at dawn. There was a sharp conflict the morning of the 14th with some 2,000 convicts whom Santa Anna had released from prison. These were suppressed and the war was virtually ended.

VII

MEXICO—*Continued* (1846-1848)

THE successful invasion of Mexico by the small army of Americans, their forcing the capitulation of a large and strongly fortified capital in the very heart of the country and compelling substantially unconditional terms of surrender, is something little short of marvellous when the character of civilization and the population of that country are considered. The Americans were confronted in every battle with artillery superior in both number and weight of metal, and with equally effective small arms, with the single exception of the primitive revolver,¹ with cavalry largely in excess of their own, and, as is well known, the natives of that country are unexcelled in horsemanship. Furthermore, it is admitted without question that the Mexicans were a brave and courageous people, that in many of the battles herein described they fought gallantly, as at Contreras, Churubusco, Molino del Rey, Chapulte-

¹ General D. H. Hill in a conversation stated to me that many of the Americans carried revolvers; they were of a crude pattern; that the Mexicans were not at all familiar with this arm and that many of them exhibited a very perceptible dread of the man who could continue firing without having to stop to load; that the revolver was what was known as the pepper box pattern.—T. J. A.

pec and at the gate San Cosme. The only explanation would seem to be in the fact that they were untrained masses. Their leaders were undoubtedly inefficient. They were outmanœuvred on every occasion. Not one battle had been fought, save the siege of Vera Cruz, on ground of their own choosing, in the manner anticipated. And they had been taken by surprise in every important battle. The most casual glance at what had taken place in the campaign will impress the reader with the fact that young Jackson had allowed no opportunity to distinguish himself to pass unheeded, but that he had availed himself of each opening as fortune had presented it. He had eagerly sought the vacancy in Magruder's company of field artillery. When the command of a section of the battery unexpectedly devolved upon him in the midst of the battle of Contreras, he almost immediately, without waiting for orders, exercised the initiative of moving his guns farther to the front, within more effective range of the enemy. Then later he had welcomed the order assigning him to the independent command of his section at Chapultepec. Colonel Henderson in referring to this writes: "It was a small charge, but he had utilized it to the utmost, and it had filled the cup of his ambition to the brim. Ambitious he certainly was."¹ Dr. Dabney says, "He confessed to an intimate friend that the order of General Pillow, separating his section, for the day, from his captain, had excited his abiding gratitude; so that, while the reg-

¹ Henderson's "Jackson."

ular officers were rather inclined to depreciate that general as an unprofessional soldier, he loved him because he gave him an opportunity to win distinction." His friends asked him if he felt no trepidation when so many were falling around him. He replied, no; the only anxiety of which he was conscious in any of these engagements was a fear lest he should not meet danger enough to make his conduct under it as conspicuous as he desired; and as the fire grew hotter, he rejoiced in it as his coveted opportunity. He also declared to those who were surmising the effect of the dangers of battle upon their spirits that to him it was always exalting, and that he was conscious of a more perfect command of all his faculties, and of their more clear and rapid action when under fire than at any other time. Dr. Dabney then says, "This, it will be remembered, was a distinguishing feature in the character of Napoleon's celebrated lieutenant, Marshal Ney."

As to the recognition which Jackson's conduct, in the preceding battles, had attracted from his superiors, it is only necessary to quote from their official reports. The Commander-in-Chief says, "To the north, and at the base of the mound (Chapultepec), inaccessible on that side, the Eleventh Infantry, under Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert, and the fourteenth under Colonel Trousdale, and Captain Magruder's field-battery, First Artillery (one section advanced under Lieutenant Jackson), all of Pillow's division, had at the same time some spirited affairs against

superior numbers, driving the enemy from a battery in the road, and capturing a gun. In these the officers and corps named gained merited praise. Having turned the forest on the west, and arriving opposite to the north centre of Chapultepec, Worth came up with the troops in the road under Colonel Trousdale, and aided by a flank movement of a part of Garland's brigade in taking the one-gun breast-work, then under fire of Lieutenant Jackson's section of Magruder's battery." General Pillow says, "Colonel Trousdale's command, consisting of the Eleventh and Fourteenth Regiments of Infantry, and Magruder's field-battery, engaged a battery and large force in the road, immediately on the west of Chapultepec. The advanced section of the battery, under command of the brave Lieutenant Jackson, was dreadfully cut up, and almost disabled. Though the command of Colonel Trousdale sustained a severe loss, still he drove the enemy from his battery and turned his guns upon his retreating forces. Captain Magruder's battery, one section of which was served with great gallantry by himself, and the other by his brave Lieutenant Jackson, in the face of a galling fire from the enemy's position, did invaluable service preparatory to the general assault." General Worth, though commanding a different division of troops, says, "After advancing some four hundred yards, we came to a battery which had been assailed by a portion of Magruder's field guns, particularly the section under the gallant Jackson, who, although he had lost most of his horses and

many of his men, continued chivalrously at his post, combating with noble courage." And Magruder thus compliments and recommends him for promotion: "I beg leave to call the attention of the major-general commanding the division to the conduct of Lieutenant Jackson of the First Artillery. If devotion, industry, talent, and gallantry are the highest qualities of a soldier, then is he entitled to the distinction which their possession confers. I have been ably seconded in all the operations of the battery by him; and upon this occasion,¹ when circumstances placed him in command for a short time of an independent section, he proved himself eminently worthy of it." It is significant that the above report of Magruder was received by Captain Joe Hooker, at the time acting as adjutant to General Pillow, afterwards a major-general in the Federal army and commander at Chancellorsville. Dr. Dabney after reciting that for his conduct at Chapultepec Jackson received the brevet rank of major of artillery says, "To this he had risen, purely by the force of his merit, within seven months, from the insignificant position of brevet second lieutenant. No other officer in the whole army in Mexico was promoted so often for meritorious conduct, or made so great a stride in rank. If the conduct which has been detailed be examined, it will be found to contain every evidence of bravery, thirst for distinction, coolness, and military talent. We see the young lieutenant, the moment the fall of his immediate superior placed

¹ Referring to Chapultepec.

him in command of a detachment at Churubusco¹ (Contreras), awaiting no orders, but guided by the sound of his captain's guns on his left, emulously pressing forward towards the enemy. At Chapultepec he is assigned to the post of honor and danger, and advanced with alacrity. When Colonel Trousdale, to whom he owed merely a momentary subordination, thrust him into a position almost desperate, and he was well-nigh deserted by his men, he refused to retire without orders.² Comprehending all the advantages and perils of his situation at once, he proposed rather to exercise the further audacity of storming the battery before him than to attempt a disastrous retreat exposed to its fire. And when the arrival of reinforcements relieved him of his danger, he displayed his ready resource in pursuing the defeated foe, where any other officer would have felt fully justified in busying himself only with carrying the shattered remains of his command to the rear." And from the same, "Upon being asked, 'Major, why did you not run when your command was thus disabled?' he answered with a quiet smile, 'I was not ordered to do so. If I had been ordered to run, I should have done so. But I was directed to hold my position, and I had no right to abandon it.'" Colonel Henderson, in commenting upon Jackson's participation in the campaign, says, "His share of glory was more than ample. Contreras

¹ Lieutenant Johnstone was killed at Contreras.

² General Worth sent him orders to retire. See letter of date October 26, 1847, p. 130.

gave him the brevet rank of captain. For his conduct at Chapultepec he was mentioned in the Commander-in-Chief's dispatches, and publicly complimented on his courage." The same author then relates the following incident which came to him in a personal letter from General Gibbon of the United States Army: "Shortly after the capture of the city General Scott held a levee, and amongst others presented to him was Lieutenant Jackson. When he heard the name, the general drew himself up to his full height, and, placing his hands behind him, said with affected sternness, 'I don't know that I shall shake hands with Mr. Jackson.' Jackson, blushing like a girl, was overwhelmed with confusion. General Scott, seeing that he had called the attention of every one in the room, said, 'If you can forgive yourself for the way in which you slaughtered those poor Mexicans with your guns, I am not sure that I can,' and then held out his hand." "No greater compliment," says General Gibbon, "could have been paid a young officer, and Jackson apparently did not know he had done anything remarkable till his general told him so." It may be here stated as indicating the innate modesty of Jackson, and as truly illustrative of the man, that the incident above described was never repeated by him to his most intimate relatives and friends, so far as is known. Not even did he relate this to his sister. The presumption is that it was not mentioned to his wife, as there is no allusion to it in her "Life of Jackson." Colonel Henderson further says, "Such promotion

was phenomenal even in the Mexican war, and none of his West Point comrades made so great a stride in rank."

The siege of Vera Cruz, the subsequent battles, the long marches, and rough roads afforded exceptional training to a young officer for the difficulties incident to war: Observation of men under fire in battle; knowing one's self under such conditions, the excitement, the long and seemingly inexhaustible patience necessary when on the march, when exposed to fire, often without opportunity to reply; the causes that produce panics; the panic itself; the control that can possibly be exercised to prevent it; also, to check it, how to deal with it when once it gains ascendancy over troops; the different effects observable upon the recruit and the regular; the many points arising in the practical, that never occur, nor of which a knowledge can be had in the theoretical school of war; to know and measure the ability, the energy, the prudence, the promptness, and dilatoriness of action, the mental attainments, the capabilities of comrades; the knowledge of what may be gained by availing one's self of every opening for a wedge, to promptly grasp every chance, to profit at once by every slight mistake of an adversary; the advantage of surprise; the mode of successfully executing a manœuvre to effect such a result; the increased gain from it when accomplished, if followed up by incessant pressing and driving the adversary without respite or rest, with the strong probability of thereby creating a panic in his ranks and the

not allowing him time in which to repair it. These were some of the lessons that were no doubt carefully conned and as carefully stored away for possible future use, we may feel assured, by one possessing the eager, active mind of young Jackson, coupled with an unquenchable desire or ambition to attain still further knowledge in the art of war. To be able to know and fully realize what he himself would be capable of accomplishing under like conditions; to discern the mistakes of others, and to formulate opinion as to how they could have been avoided or remedied; all this made for profitable knowledge for the student of arms.

Young Jackson had witnessed the winning of the strongly fortified intrenchments of Cerro Gordo by a flank march, accompanied by an insignificant loss. He had witnessed the success of the flank march from Ayotla to San Augustin, rendering useless the strongly fortified position of Santa Anna at El Peñon and Mexicalcingo, and which resulted in compelling the enemy to abandon his intrenchments and concentrate his force at San Antonio in order to protect the capital, and then the flank march across the Pedregal, then the battle of Contreras, supplemented by the flank march in the night, the complete surprise and unexpected assault on the wing and rear, and the capture of the seemingly impregnable works in a few minutes' time, resulting in the utter discomfiture and rout of the enemy. One can hardly estimate the value of this experience following immediately upon four full years of instruction and

training at the foremost military school of the world.¹

Jackson was ever industrious. He could not countenance idleness. It is but fair to suppose that throughout the whole course of his life he earnestly tried to make the most of every opportunity. He seemed alive to every opening. What Mexico was worth to him in his later career can only be matter of conjecture. All such experience, however, is worth but little to him who has not the ability to apply and utilize its teachings. He had known, and probably most of them well, almost every one who later attained prominence on one side or the other in the Civil War. Aside from those heretofore named, Magruder, Hooker, McDowell and A. P. Hill, the latter a classmate, belonged to his own regiment. Then there were those of Scott's staff that have been named. Shields commanded a brigade; Pope was a staff officer. He had served alongside of Bee and D. H. Hill in the onward rush towards the city gate of San Cosme; Lieutenants Pickett, Longstreet and Edward Johnston were conspicuous at Chapultepec. Huger, Porter and Reno were also with the artillery. Ewell had two horses killed under him at Churubusco; and Joseph E. Johnston, wounded on two occasions, made a most enviable record in the Dragoons. Early, another

¹ The well-known English authority on matters military, Dr. T. Miller Maguire, in one of his text-books, viz., "Jackson's Campaigns in Virginia," at page 55 refers to West Point Military Academy (of about the period of Jackson's graduation) as the best army school in the world,

graduate of West Point, served as major of a Virginia regiment. The initiative and resourcefulness displayed by young Jackson on each occasion when opportunity presented, as at the first day's battle at Contreras, and again at Chapultepec, when viewed in retrospect, would seem to have been sufficient upon which to forecast the possibilities of a subsequent brilliant career should opportunity offer, as it later did in the Civil War.

VIII

MEXICO—*Continued* (1846–1848)

FOLLOWING the occupation of the city of Mexico General Smith was designated as military governor thereof. Jackson resumed his duties as first lieutenant with his old company under Captain Taylor, and which formed a part of General Smith's brigade. They were domiciled in the city as the garrison; Jackson with others was assigned quarters in the National Palace. It was claimed that many Mexicans regarded with favor the American rule. The downfall of Spanish authority administered under a viceroy had been succeeded by frequent revolutions and governmental changes, following the accession of each new party to power—a most unstable government for the law-abiding element of citizens. Under such conditions it was but natural that there should soon be established friendly and cordial relations between many of the more prominent Mexican families and the officers of the American army. The places of amusement were thrown open, and Mexicans and Americans intermingled. Dr. Dabney says: "To qualify himself for enjoying this society more freely, Jackson, with a young comrade, addressed himself to the study of

the Spanish language.”¹ His active mind was, besides, incapable of absolute repose, and he wished to improve his leisure by acquiring knowledge. He was ignorant of Latin, which is not taught at West Point, and the only grammar of Spanish he could find was written in that ancient tongue. Yet he bought it, and nothing daunted, set himself to learn the paradigms of the language from it; and by the help of reading and constant conversation with the people, became in a few months a good Spanish scholar.² “He ever took pleasure in testifying to the cultivation, hospitality and flowing courtesy of the Spanish gentry in Mexico, and, like Napier, among their kindred in their mother country, acknowledged the fascination of their accomplished manners, and their noble and sonorous tongue, and the indescribable grace and beauty of their women.” That he enjoyed greatly the society to which he was admitted in the city may be readily inferred from his letters. That there was no probability of its leading to a serious turn is equally certain, and he so writes his sister, “I have no tie in this country equal to you,”—although at one time he had a strong inclination to remain in Mexico. Whether he saw a prospect of business opportunities, or a political opening in a much distracted and unsettled country is mere conjecture.

In acquiring a knowledge of the language of the

¹ Lieutenant Jackson had previously been studying the language. See letter from Jalapa of May 25, 1847, p. 92.

² See in this connection letter of March 23, 1848, p. 136.

country the subject of this sketch without doubt was the recipient of much valuable aid from his fair Señorita friends; and such help would be likely to add interest to the lessons, making of them very pleasant tasks. And with the musical intonation in its pronunciation as given by these charming instructors, the Spanish language would become a delightful study—far more so than it seemed to the writer some years later with Major Jackson as his instructor. Colonel Henderson says, "Jackson learned to dance," and referring to his acquisition of Spanish, remarks, "And it is significant that to the end of his life he retained a copious vocabulary of those tender diminutives which fall so gracefully from Spanish lips." "Having formed the acquaintance of some educated ecclesiastics of the Church of Rome, he went by their invitation to reside with them. He found their bachelor abode the perfection of luxurious comfort. Upon awaking in the morning, the servants brought him, before he arose from bed, a light repast, consisting of a few diminutive spiced cakes, and a single cup of that delicious chocolate which is found only in Spanish houses. He then dressed, went out, and attended to the drill of his company. Later in the morning, when the sun began to display his power, he returned to a breakfast of coffee, fruits and game. The greater part of the day was then spent in study or visiting; and it closed with a dinner in which Parisian art vied with the tropical fruits native to the climate in conferring enjoyment."

But during his stay in Mexico, amid all this pleas-

ure Jackson's serious nature was also at work. Dr. Dabney says, "All the information which can now be gathered points to the devout Colonel Frank Taylor,¹ commanding his regiment of artillery, as his first official spiritual guide. This good man was accustomed to labor as a father for the religious welfare of his young officers, and Jackson's manly nature seems to have awakened his especial interest. During the campaign of the summer his instruction and prayers had produced so much effect as to awaken an abiding anxiety and spirit of inquiry in Jackson's mind." "It seems to have been almost a law of his nature . . . to be convinced in his understanding of a duty was to set straightway about its performance. He resolved to make the Bible his study, and with a characteristic independence of mind, to take nothing as to his own religious duties, from prejudice, or from the claims of the various denominations into which he saw the religious world divided. His attitude towards all creeds and sects was at this time singularly unbiased. His later education was obtained among a great company of young men, assembled from every church, under the slender instructions of an army chaplain. His own religious knowledge was extremely scanty. He resolved to examine for himself and decide conscientiously. Through his monastic friends he was introduced to the Archbishop of Mexico, with whom he had a number of interviews. Jackson found him affable,

¹ Colonel Francis Taylor of Virginia, a graduate of the United States Military Academy of the class of 1821.

able and learned, and was deeply impressed with his sincerity and honesty; and he further asserted that the doctrines of the Church of Rome as expounded by intelligent Catholics were by no means gross or obnoxious to common sense as is represented by many Protestants. In this matter Jackson moved with slowness and caution. He was conscientious and careful about the purity of his life. He evidently continued his researches, and had no settled conviction as to what branch of the church he should choose."

On March 5, 1848, an armistice for two months was concluded between General Scott and the Mexican authorities, and on the 26th of May following a treaty of peace was finally ratified; and on the 12th of the ensuing June, the last of the United States forces vacated the capital. Young Jackson's correspondence from the time of his arrival in the city of Mexico will now be resumed. In his first letter following he fully acknowledges the protecting care of the Almighty One over him in the recent battles through which he had passed.

City of Mexico, October 26, 1847.

DEAR SISTER :

On a blank commission captured in the National Palace of Mexico, I again am favored with the agreeable duty of saying that yourself, husband and family still live in my memory and heart. I have since my entry into this land seen sights that would melt the heart of the most inhuman of beings: my friends dying around me and my brave soldiers breathing their last on the bloody fields of battle, deprived of every human comfort, and

even now I can hardly open my eyes after entering a hospital, the atmosphere of which is generally so vitiated as to make the healthy sick. I would not live in one a week, under the circumstances in which I have seen them, for the whole of Mexico. To die on the battlefield is relief when compared to the death in a contaminated hospital. There are no important changes here. A train is going to Vera Cruz in a few days. I am trying to make myself contented as I see but feeble prospects for peace. I have bought a fine horse for one hundred and eighty dollars. As I believe that this country is destined to be reformed by ours, I think that probably I shall spend many years here and may possibly conclude (though I have not yet) to make my life more natural by sharing it with some amiable Señorita. I am only induced in this event from not inviting you to live with me by the fact of your having one of the best of husbands. This country offers more inducements for me than the United States, inasmuch as there is more room for improvement in everything that is good and commendable. The term corruption expresses the state of this unfortunate people better than any other in the English language. They have one of the best of climates and countries. . . . To you I have written letter after letter, but no answer comes to tell me that yourself, husband, Thomas and all are well. Your last was dated, I think, in March. Seven long months have elapsed. I wish to know many things which are at your command, among which, . . . the given name of Uncle Richard Neale's eldest daughter, and Wirt's address, as I wish to write to both. As I was coming from Jalapa I was detached with a few men in the vicinity of LaHoya and succeeded in killing four of the enemy and taking three

prisoners, together with a beautiful sabre and some other equipment. I have been exposed to many dangers in the battles of this valley but have escaped unhurt. I was once reported killed and nothing but the strong and powerful hand of Almighty God could have brought me through unhurt. Imagine, for instance, my situation at Chapultepec, within full range, and in a road which was swept with grape and canister, and at the same time thousands of muskets from the Castle itself above pouring down like hail upon you. General Pillow has spoken in high terms of me, and General Worth has even gone out of his own division in his report in order to pay me a compliment. During the battle General Worth ordered me to retire, but I sent him back word that, with one company of regulars as a support, I could carry the work, upon which he moved forward a whole brigade. I feel proud of the source from which such praise comes. I had written you a long letter, but I have concluded not to send it. Give to all friends and relatives the love of your affectionate brother.

THOMAS.

Mrs. L. A. Arnold and family.

The next letter also discloses Jackson's earnest and devout religious tendency. His sister had been very ill and he had been evidently much concerned as to her condition.

City of Mexico, February 28, 1848.

DEAREST SISTER :

The mail came on the 26th, and in vain I searched the post-office thrice for a line from you, and consequently sorrowfully I commenced my letter to you ; but on leaving my desk for a few hours on business, was agreeably surprised, on my return, to find your letter

mysteriously placed on my table. And now while I recommence, with joy inexpressible for tongue or pen at hearing of your life still being prolonged, I also am most deeply affected with heartfelt sorrow at the words which say, "I may not live to receive your answer," but I hope that these words imply nothing beyond what they literally state. This is the earnest prayer to God of your brother. But if He in His great wisdom has afflicted you with disease incurable, then may He in His infinite goodness receive you into His heavenly abode where, though I should be deprived of you here in this world of cares, yet I should hope to meet with you in a land where care and sorrow are unknown; there with a mother, a brother, a sister and yourself, and, I hope, a father, to live in a state of felicity, uncontaminated by mortality. Let not this letter trouble you, dearest sister, for I could not write one of a different cast with a clear conscience when you speak to me so ominously. But do not be deterred by any cause from saying to me plainly, "that I am sick," or "that I am well." You appear to think hard of my not writing more frequently, but I have not only written by every mail but on one occasion sent by a Spanish friend. In fine, I have embraced every opportunity to write you. For the future, the intention is to send the mail by escorts twice a month on the 1st and 15th, so that you may expect to hear from me by every mail until I am ordered from this city, which may or may not be at all, as I am in General Smith's brigade, and he is governor of the city. I am first lieutenant and belong to Captain Taylor's battery.¹ I hope the war

¹ Had been transferred back from Magruder's battery, or what is more likely Magruder's independent battery, had been discontinued and he also resumed his place in the first regiment.

may soon terminate, but do not entertain much hope, although the terms of a treaty have been sent to Washington. At present an armistice is being made or has been concluded, but as yet is not public. Santa Anna has asked of his government a passport for the purpose of leaving the country, and it was granted to him on the 13th instant; but it is doubtful whether he will go, as several of the states have expressed themselves favorably to him. And Guanojuato has offered him an asylum. If we both live I expect to see you. Do not allow my words about marrying in Mexico to disturb you. I have sometimes thought of staying here, and again of going home. I have no tie in this country equal to you. You speak of my fine horse as being in your opinion rather extravagant, but if an officer wishes to appear best, he should appear well in everything. I bought the horse, having plenty of money and need of him, and have since been offered three hundred and fifty dollars for him; that is one hundred and seventy more than I gave, and can at any time get more than I gave. My pay while with Captain Magruder was one hundred and four dollars per month, and I expect it will soon be the same here; but at present it is only about ninety; yet I have plenty of money, and am in the long run economical, although it would not appear so to you, as here everything is dear and with you cheap. I dress as a gentleman should who wishes to be received as such. I do not gamble, nor spend my money, as I think, foolishly. I am very desirous of peace, as it may be better for the United States, and it may give me an opportunity of again entering your hospitable house and having that sight most delightful of all earthly ones, that is, of my sister. My health, I think, is improving in this country, and at all

events my knowledge of Spanish is. . . . Remember me to Mr. Arnold and friends in the warmest terms.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

The next letter is to his brother-in-law, Mr. Jonathan Arnold.

City of Mexico, March 21, 1848.

DEAR SIR:

Though I have not had the pleasure of your company for nearly two years, yet that which I then enjoyed still continues in memory and I have hopes of again presenting myself at your hospitable door. After parting from you and enduring a long and tedious march, I reached what has been termed the republic of Mexico, but which I fear it will never be again. Would to God it could be such a republic as ours. Then would this unhappy people be the most favored of all others. Their country possesses nearly every diversity of climate, soil and production. From the burning temperature of Vera Cruz you can pass to the snow-capped summit of Orizaba without transcending one hundred miles, and within this limit you have every climate desirable for man, and soil of nearly every grade, producing fruits of the most delicious character for the daily market. Its intermediate inhabitants, as those of Jalapa, do not know the distinction of seasons, except nominally. Among its productions, in addition to those common to our happy country, may be mentioned coffee, cinnamon, pepper, pineapple and almost any other except tea, which, as in our country, has to be obtained from China. After passing Jalapa, which is only about four or five thousand feet above the level of the sea, you continue to ascend to Las Vegas,

which is about eight thousand feet altitude. From this point the road descends to Perote, which is warmer than Las Vegas but is still too cold to be comfortable, and so high that comparatively little rain reaches it, when compared to other points. I remember that whilst on my way to this place I saw the clouds below me and the rain descending from them, and above them all clear and calm. Perote is about midway between Vera Cruz and the city of Mexico. It is but a small town, but is protected by a strong and magnificent fortification of the same name constructed during the Spanish reign and which could only be taken, if well manned, by regular approaches. The next place of importance on the national road is Puebla, which is, from its manufacturing character, the Lowell of Mexico, but to an American the place is extremely uninteresting; but sixty odd miles further west is situated the ancient city of the Aztecs which contains people of most every clime. In it is to be found mirth, beauty, fine manners, variety and in fine all that man can reasonably want. . . . With care this city is very healthy, but attention to the health must be paid as the air is so very rarified that it appears to penetrate the pores in a moment, and a cold may be the consequence and a speedy death the final result. A cold in this climate is very different from what it is in ours. Here it can by care generally be cured in thirty-six hours. Consumption is almost unknown, and in its rare cases it generally takes a chronic form. I have not seen, to my recollection, a single case since my entrance in the city; and Dr. Martinez, a Spanish physician of note, who has been educated in England and Paris, has told me that this fact is not generally known, but a few months since he communicated it to the Parisian Medical Insti-

tute. So that after tranquillity shall have been established here, I think that invalids, instead of visiting Cuba, will select Mexico. The peace is now viewed by many as very improbable, as it is thought the article in reference to the Texan lands will not be admitted by the United States, and that the owners of those lands will have considerable influence with the treaty making power of this country. Remember me to my sister in the warmest terms. Tell Thomas that his uncle wants to see him very much, and that when he comes to see him he will bring him a pretty present, provided that he should be a good boy. Remember me to all of my friends and do me the favor to write frequently and be assured of the best wishes of a brother.

T. J. JACKSON.

Then two days later to his sister :

City of Mexico, March 23, 1848.

DEAR SISTER :

I have written a letter to Mr. Arnold and requested to be remembered to you in it, but since finishing it I have concluded to send you one also. I received your letter of January 14th, but the paper from Mr. Arnold did not come to hand; but still I am as much obliged to him as though it had, and trust that he will send others as they may have better success. I thought at one time of writing a journal, but I cannot find the time, as although I am usually up at six o'clock and retire to bed at ten and eleven, still the day is not long enough. The morning hours I occupy in studies and business, and the evening in a similar manner, but generally taking a walk after dinner, and sometimes a ride on the Paseo or elsewhere in the evening. The Paseo is a wide road on

the southwest of the city and about half a mile in length, with a beautiful fountain in the centre, and is a place of fashionable resort. Families of wealth appear there in their carriages at sunset, partly if not entirely for show. There is also a place of morning resort between the city and the Paseo called the Alameda, which is a beautiful grove of about four hundred by six hundred yards and containing, I think, eight fountains. The central one is to commemorate the anniversary of Mexican independence, and from this, which is the largest, beautiful walks diverge to the different outlets, the grove being surrounded by a wall. I purpose on riding to both these places this evening hoping to see something there more attractive than at home. When not on duty I generally pay a visit after supper or tea. Among those families which I visit are some of the first in the republic, as Don Lucas Alleman, Martinez del Rio, and I also have the acquaintance of others of some distinction. . . . The book which I am now studying is Lord Chesterfield's letters to his son translated into Spanish; so that whilst I am obtaining his thoughts, I am also acquiring a knowledge of the Spanish tongue. I have also purchased the work in English. I then purpose on reading it in English. Subsequent to this I shall study Shakespeare's works, which I purchased a few days since; and then if I can obtain good histories, I wish to devote some time to them. If Uncle Cummins and Uncle Edward¹ should leave Lewis (County) I wish you would get Uncle Edward to box up my books which are in his possession and send them to you. I hope that you will try and write me a letter once a week. I should write more frequently to you if an opportunity offered of sending letters more

¹ Cummins E. and Edward Jackson.

than twice a month. Owing to my knowledge of the language of the country, and the acquaintances which I have made, I think that I pass my time more agreeably than the greater portion of the officers of the army; but if your company could also be had, I would spend my hours still more agreeably. My love to all inquiring friends. My health is as good, if not better, than usual. General Scott's case has been investigated. The charges against Colonel Duncan were withdrawn. Also General Worth withdrew his against General Scott. General Pillow's case is now being investigated.

National Palace, Mexico, April 10, 1848.

(Postmarked Vera Cruz, Mexico, April 12th.)

DEAR SISTER:

As three successive mails have arrived without bringing a single letter from you, I am, and I think not without reason, uneasy about your health, as I do not know of any other reason but bad health which could have prevented your writing to a brother, who is interested in everything that interests you. And I hope if you have any regard for my peace of mind that you will write at least once every fortnight. If your health forbids your writing at any time, then get some one to write for you, if it should be but a dozen lines. I do not think that a regular mail has left this city without carrying a letter for you from me. The treaty has arrived from Washington with its amendments. Many think that it will receive the ratification of this government, but some think that it will not. For my own part I hope it will. Mr. Sevier, I presume, will be here in a few days. At last dates from Queretaro there were wanting fifteen Congressmen and three Senators to complete the quorum,

We have received news here of a battle at Chihuahua in which we took fourteen pieces of artillery from the enemy. I am at present studying Humboldt's "History of Mexico" in Spanish. The rain is quite abundant here at present, and interferes somewhat with my evening visits. It is believed that our presence here is destroying the extreme superstition of the country. But notwithstanding the influence of our presence, the natives still, with uncovered heads, drop on their knees at the approach of the Archbishop's carriage, which is recognized by its being drawn by two spotted mules. General Pillow's trial is not yet finished, and the general opinion is that it will be terminated in the United States. We are told here that our people at home think that the army does not wish to return from Mexico; but if such is the truth, they are much mistaken. An expedition started a few days since for Popocatepetl, which is a volcanic mountain to the southeast of, and in full view of, this city, and from which still issue clouds of smoke at times. I should probably have gone myself, but as the temperature is so extremely low, resulting from the crest being capped with snow, I feared that my health might suffer.¹ In conformity with the armistice, the Mexicans have taken possession of their archives, and have resumed the civil administration of their government. Santa Anna, at last news, was at his hacienda near Jalapa, "Encerro," again bidding adieu to his country. Whilst at his hacienda, he received the visits of Colonel Hews, and several other American officers. General Valencia² died a few days since in this

¹Seventeen thousand seven hundred and eighty-two feet altitude. Some time prior to this young Jackson had made the ascent of Orizaba, which although not of so great altitude yet the rarified air had caused bleeding from his ears and nostrils.

²Commanded the Mexicans at Contreras,

city, the news of which proved fatal to his daughter, who died a few hours subsequent to its reception. I have heard of no others who mourn his fate. The general hospital is ordered to be moved to Jalapa ; and General Patterson, I believe, will go down, at the same time, to take command of that station. This movement appears to indicate an anticipation of leaving the country. Remember me to Mr. Arnold, Thomas and other friends.

T. J. JACKSON.

IX

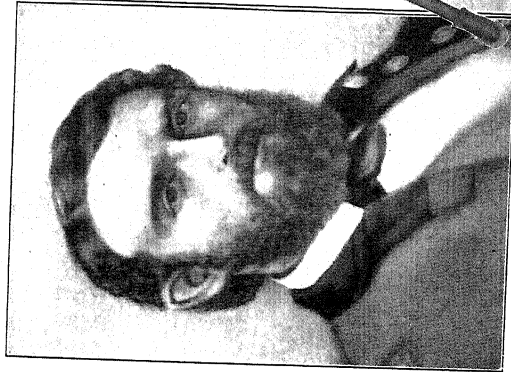
GOVERNOR'S ISLAND (1848)

THE period of Major Jackson's stay in the city of Mexico, and the many courtesies extended to him while there by its attractive and hospitable people, marked a bright page in his memory. It is to be regretted that there is no more data extant bearing on the charming life that he led there. It was ever afterwards a pleasant subject of conversation with him. There is nothing of his correspondence preserved to indicate the exact date of his departure from that city and leave-taking from these friends, nor incidents of his march from there to the coast and final embarkation. All that is known is that the voyage was made from Vera Cruz to New Orleans; that there was a pleasant stop over of several days in that city; and that from there he proceeded to New York. The next letter in the collection bears the postmark of the latter city, and was written from Governor's Island. It is dated :

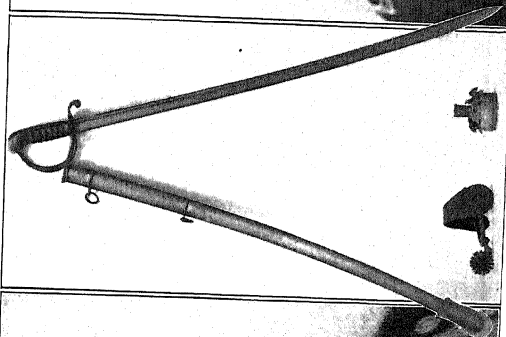
August 26, 1848.

DEAR SISTER :

Finally I have arrived at this station which is in sight of the city of New York. I have had some hopes of visiting you this fall, but I have not been able to arrange



Major Jackson at New Orleans *en route* from Mexico. "Rather than wilfully violate the known will of God, I would forfeit my life. Such a resolution I have taken, and I will by it abide." Page 159.



Artillery sabre carried by Jackson in the campaign in Mexico; and one of his spurs and ink-well.



Young Jackson in the City of Mexico—age 23. "It may have been one of His (God's) means of diminishing my excessive ambition." Page 91.

my affairs here for that purpose, and consequently I cannot say when I will be able to visit those of whom I so frequently think, and so much desire to be with. I presume that I could get home this winter by making sacrifices which I ought not to make. For instance, if I should leave, some other officer might be attached during my absence who would rank me in case of his remaining with the company after my return. I do not believe that Captain Taylor would give his sanction to any officer's coming to the company who would rank me so long as I remain with the company, or so long as there are officers enough with it; but my absence might reduce the number of officers so much as to render another officer necessary to the company. But I am in hopes that next summer I shall be able to see you; and if so, I purpose on visiting the Springs at several places, and visiting those parts of Virginia most remarkable, such as the Natural Bridge. You will please let me know the distance from Beverley to Staunton, and the time in which the stage makes the run, and also the distance from Beverley to the White Sulphur Springs. As yet I do not know where I will be stationed. I hope that ere this your eyes are perfectly recovered. I am still getting better. I have been brevetted a captain, though as yet it is not published. Write frequently to your brother.

T. J. JACKSON.

Notwithstanding the reasons assigned in the above letter for not visiting his sister the current year, she evidently, from what appears in the following letter, had been able to induce him to change his mind and take the necessary steps towards obtaining a leave of absence. The letter was written from

Carlisle Barracks, Penna., September 5, 1848.

DEAR SISTER:

I had the pleasure of receiving your letter directed to New York. But the same day I received orders to attend as a member of a general court martial at this place, which is about a hundred miles distant (from and) east of Pittsburgh. I observe that you wish me to make you one proposal.¹ In reply I propose to see you in your own house on the 10th of October, which is earlier than you even requested. As I have already given you my reasons for not coming this fall, it is unnecessary to state that I may make sacrifices in visiting you. But on reading your letter I concluded that I would use my influence to do that which I so much desire to do,—to visit you. But as yet the court has not adjourned, and I have not yet got my leave of absence granted. But Captain Taylor told me that he would not only approve of it, but recommend it. But before I can get it I must obtain the permission of the colonel of my regiment and of the Secretary of War. But should I not arrive by the time specified, do not have anxiety about it. If it be unsuccessful, the fault shall not be mine. There are many very interesting ladies here, and there has been a *soirée* almost every day since my arrival, and at which I have enjoyed myself well. When I obtain my leave, should I get it, you must not expect me to stay with you more than a month. And I hope that your health will be much improved by that time. You need not write me until you receive another letter from me, as I cannot say where I may be at any coming day. Remember me to

¹ His sister was contemplating making a visit to some of her relatives residing at a distance, and had intimated in her letter to him that he might join her while on this visit and accompany her home instead of coming direct to Beverley and thus preventing her visit.

Mr. Arnold, your family, and my other friends. My health, I think, is still improving.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

Mrs. L. A. Arnold.

As expected, Major Jackson was enabled to arrange his affairs and obtain a furlough for a short absence, but not at as early a date nor for as extended a time as he had contemplated, as the following brief note would indicate. It was written December 2, 1848, and follows some correspondence with his sister in regard to the visit they were to make together to their relatives in Lewis County, at and in the vicinity of his former home, also to Clarksburg, the place of their nativity, and possibly thence to their relatives residing in and about Parkersburg.

DEAR SISTER :

I expect to be with you on Monday night, but possibly not much before the following morning. As I will have to go on immediately, I wish you to be in readiness, if you purpose on accompanying me. . . .

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

In accordance with the above notice Major Jackson arrived by stage-coach at my father's home in Beverley. My impression is that my mother was not able to accompany him on the prearranged visit, and that he continued the journey alone, and after a brief stay at the places named, returned to Beverley, and remained with my parents until it was time for

his return to Fort Hamilton. The first letter subsequent to this visit was written soon after his arrival at that post, and would indicate that exposure in his recent travels through the mountains of Virginia in the winter season had seriously affected his health. It is dated :

*Fort Hamilton, New York Harbor,
January 1, 1849.*

DEAR SISTER :

I suppose that you begin to think it time that I should write, but I am not certain that my physician agrees with you about that ; . . . but at all events I shall venture to say that I am still living, and, with the blessing of God, hope to live for some years to come. My physician has pronounced my lungs and liver sound, and that the liver has only been sympathetically affected. Whilst in Richmond I called on Mr. Carlisle,¹ and was received by him in a very cordial manner ; and during my stay there he allowed no opportunity to pass unimproved in which he could manifest his kindness. The night after I left your house I passed out at the head of the Valley River, and the next morning was in about seventeen miles of Huntersville ; but notwithstanding, I reached the Hot Springs too late for the Wednesday's stage, and consequently had to wait until Friday. I am, as you have observed, at Fort Hamilton, which is on Long Island, about ten miles below the city of New York, and on the east bank of the Hudson River. Remember me to Mr. Arnold, the children, etc.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

¹ Hon. John S. Carlisle, at the time a member of the Virginia Legislature ; afterwards a member of Congress and of the United States Senate.

The preceding letter recalls to my mind an amusing episode that occurred in the course of the journey therein described, as I heard it related years afterwards by my father, much to the merriment of our family. It was very important for Major Jackson to arrive at the Hot Springs in Bath County, Virginia, in time to enable him to take passage in the tri-weekly stage-coach from that point, on the ensuing Wednesday. In order that he might do this my father mounted him on his favorite horse, and which, it may be remarked, was well known throughout the Valley. He left our home in Beverley late in the afternoon, and stopped for the night, long after dark, with an old German named Peter Conrad, who resided some twenty miles south of Beverley. Upon retiring he requested that he be called in time to resume his journey about three o'clock the next morning, and as characteristic with Major Jackson, gave no intimation as to who he was, or his reason for wishing to depart at such an unusual hour. Major Jackson arose in time, without waiting to be called, and ordered his horse to be fed and brought out that he might resume his journey. Much to his consternation he was informed by old Peter that the horse would not be forthcoming, and furthermore, that he would not be allowed to continue his journey. He assigned as his reason that that horse belonged to Jonathan Arnold of Beverley, and that he intended to keep it there for him. A stranger, arriving in the night and proposing to leave before daylight the next morning, had evi-

dently, in the time intervening, given Peter food for thought with the result that he had reached the conclusion that this fine looking stranger was getting away with a horse, the property of his friend, Jonathan Arnold, and in which proceeding he had determined to take a hand then and there. Peter was fearless, and a more obstinate specimen of the *genus homo* never lived. Having once made up his mind it was a finality ; to change his opinion was a task about equal to a new creation. One can well imagine the warfare of argument that ensued, supplemented by much and repeated explanation, accompanied with no little very natural indignation. Greatly to the surprise of those who ever knew Peter Conrad, the young army officer, in fine uniform, finally convinced Peter that he was the brother-in-law of the owner of the horse, and that it was all important for him to arrive at the Hot Springs in time for the Wednesday stage-coach, and he was allowed to proceed on his journey. Whether this delay caused him to miss the connection, as related in his letter, I do not now remember to have heard, but it is not at all improbable. The next letter presents Major Jackson in an entirely new rôle. It will be remembered that his boyhood was passed in the home of bachelor uncles, and where there were no females other than the negro slaves. It was written from Fort Hamilton.

February 1, 1849.

DEAR SISTER :

I have more than once thought of your request, to write you and give you the fashions ; but such would

be a difficult thing for me to do, as I do not know even so much as the names of the different parts of a lady's apparel. I, in the matter of dress, agree perfectly with the Parisians, who not only give the fashions for New York but for the civilized world, that a person ought to adopt such a style of dress as is most becoming the particular individual; and not that which is adopted by the greater portion of mankind, unless it should be at least reasonably suited to your complexion, height, figure, etc. I have begun my historical studies, having read about one-fourth of Rollin's "Ancient History." If Mr. Arnold can prevail on the wagoner who may bring my books to Cumberland to put the box in the office of Adams & Co., who have an office in Cumberland, and their cars running from there to New York, he will secure them to me more effectually than in any other way. Let the man take a receipt for them and forward it to me at this place. The box should be marked as follows: Captain T. J. Jackson, care of the Quartermaster in New York City, N. Y. The manner in which the company does business is to give a receipt when anything is delivered at the office, and then to turn over the article when the receipt is presented; and if the article should get lost to pay the owner for it. The cholera has entirely disappeared from this place (Quarantine). The weather is quite disagreeable. I caught the rheumatism in your salubrious mountain air, which is harassing me no little. I am gaining strength and flesh. If Mr. Gibson will write to Captain Arnold, who is at Fort Monroe, Va., I am of the opinion that he will get some information in relation to the ammunition which was charged to his brother, as he was a lieutenant in Arnold's company. I am well fixed here, having my

rooms both carpeted and decently furnished. Remember me to Mr. Arnold, the family, Aunt White, uncle and our other relatives.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

A postscript to the above letter relative to the California gold excitement prevailing at the period is given on page 57, and then quoting further from his informant, he writes of California :

"The climate is most delightful, the thermometer standing at from sixty to seventy degrees. As you may not know much about thermometers (it is well to remember that thermometers were not in common use at this period), it may not be amiss for me to state that Fahrenheit's thermometer, which is the one commonly used in this country, and the one referred to above, stands at thirty-two degrees when water freezes; at fifty-five degrees the air is temperate, at seventy-five degrees the air is at summer heat, at ninety-five degrees the air is at blood-heat, and two hundred and twelve degrees the air would be at the temperature of boiling water; from the foregoing, you observe, the climate referred to must be charming."

T. J. J.

The next letter reveals more of Major Jackson's devout religious nature at this early period of his life.

*Fort Hamilton, New York Harbor,
March 1, 1849.*

DEAR SISTER :

Yours has come safe to hand, and I regret to learn from its contents that death has made such havoc

among your neighbors; yet all must pay the same final debt, and my sincere desire and *thrice daily prayer*¹ is, that when your exit comes that your previous preparation will have been made. How *glorious* will it be in that august and heaven-ordained day to meet with mother, brother, sister and father around the shining throne of Omnipotence; there I wish and hope to meet you, with a joy that shall never be alloyed by separation. I have not as yet visited the city, but my health is so improved, that I expect to do so before long; and then I shall take pleasure in obtaining and forwarding to Mr. Arnold catalogues from the two most celebrated book firms in the United States. One is that of Harper & Brothers; the other Appleton's. The former has the largest assortment in the United States, and the latter the best in quality, but high in price; and as the former are the cheaper, I prefer them for my own use; but when Mr. Arnold receives the catalogues he can judge for himself, and if he wishes me to make any purchases for him it will give me pleasure to do so. And by informing me what works to get, and where to direct them, I will be enabled to send them safely to any designated point between New York City and Cumberland. I fear that I shall find some difficulty in selecting you an appropriate work, as I know of none at this time, but I shall make an effort. It would be a source of gratification to write to you every fortnight; but writing, as I may have told you, gives me pain in the right side, and which I am by no means free from at this moment. . . . Remember me kindly to the family and my relatives.

Your brother,

Mrs. L. A. Arnold.

THOMAS.

¹ Italics added.

*Fort Hamilton, New York Harbor,
April 7, 1849.*

DEAR SISTER :

Owing to a desire to secure some catalogues for Mr. Arnold, I have not written earlier. Yesterday I went to Harper & Brothers' bookstore, but they had none on hand, but said that they would have in a few days. I obtained one from Appleton's establishment, and shall forward it by the same mail as this letter. It does not contain all his books. When I shall have obtained one from Harper's I shall also forward it. And if Mr. Arnold shall want any books that may not be found in either of them, let me know what ones they are, and I believe that I can find them in some part of the city. Your request has not yet been complied with, but I rely on your generosity of character, as my strength forbids much exercise, and especially walking on the hard pavements of the city. But I am improving in both flesh and strength and I hope in health also. I am now under the care of one of the first medical men of New York City. I have lately commenced visiting more frequently, and every few evenings receive an invitation to some social party. Yesterday, whilst walking through the city, I thought of the pleasure which I would derive from sharing the contemplation of its beauties and wonders with you. Naturally I recalled to mind, and applied to New York, what the Frenchman asserted of Paris when he said that when a man had seen Paris, that he had seen all the world. In New York may be found almost anything which the inclination may desire but peaceful quiet. Everything is in motion, everything alive with animation. In its busy throng none feel the long and tedious hour; even

the invalid for the time forgets his infirmities and with wondering admiration contemplates the surrounding scenes. Frequently you are the subject of my thoughts, and if you were only within the reach of rapid communication would receive more frequent visits. The weather is moderating here.

Fort Hamilton, New York Harbor, June 12, 1849.

DEAR SISTER :

Doubtless you are expecting an answer to your last, and in truth not without reason, as I have not written for more than two months. But my silence has not originated from your not replying to my former letters, but is due to other causes, such as weak eyes and pressure of business, as I have to discharge the duties of quartermaster and commissary, in addition to my other company duties, and from such causes I have now a number of unanswered letters on hand. I wish when practicable to write to you once every month, and I do not wish you to reply unless your eyes will admit of it without pain, because I prefer that your health should be preserved to any other earthly consideration. And I hope that you will not strain your eyes on any account whatever. We cannot appreciate our blessings until deprived of them. My health is improving. I forwarded to Mr. Arnold a catalogue of Harper's publications. If there is anything in it which he wishes I hope that he will not fail to let me know. When you get possession of my books, I wish that you would retain them until I see you, or write relative to them. I have not subscribed for *Graham's Magazine*, but will do so if you desire. I merely sent you a copy in order to see how you would like it. I hope to send you a copy or number of the

Lady's Book,¹ which some prefer to Graham's, though I cannot say which is best ; but when you shall have received it, you can judge for yourself. I have received my commission as brevet major. I am gratified that you had an opportunity of doing Judge Lee a favor. I sent a fifty dollar bank draft to S—— W——, with a request that he would pay Miss C—— N—— a small sum, I think \$2.50, \$3.00 or \$3.50, which she let me have for the purpose of making a small purchase, which I did not make ; and as I have heard nothing of him since (a relative who at the time was on his way across the plains to California) and as some months have elapsed, I fear that something may be wrong. I wish that you would ask Miss Eliza N—— about it and if S—— has not settled it, I wish that you would. If at any time you should not receive an expected letter, try and make yourself easy, as in case of any accident happening to me, I have friends who would not fail to give the necessary information. The cholera in the city is on the decline. I have no dread of it, as I believe that those who keep their systems in a healthy state have but little to fear.

Your sincere brother,

THOMAS.

Mrs. L. A. Arnold.

¹ Godey's *Lady's Book*.

X

FORT HAMILTON (1848-1850)

MAJOR JACKSON was seriously handicapped at times in his studies and work in consequence of weak eyes. It was his invariable custom in reading or writing to wear a shade for their protection, and never to use them for such purposes by artificial light. He had to exercise the greatest care with them in order to be able to discharge his daily duties. By the observance of strict rules in their use, his eyes in time were much improved. In the letter following he refers to this infirmity, and from his experience is able to impart some excellent advice to his sister for the care of her eyes, which at intervals gave her more or less pain. Also, his health was so impaired as to necessitate the strictest attention on his part, at times, to the character of food that he used ; and from a study of his own dietary, he was enabled to give some valuable advice on this subject. His life while at Fort Hamilton seems to have been interspersed with various official calls to distant points. The social festivities on these occasions evidently were greatly enjoyed by him. And while he writes of the life at Fort Hamilton as being rather dull, yet it is evident that it was not entirely devoid of the usual pleasures of society in which he participated.

*Fort Hamilton, New York Harbor,
Monday, July 2, 1849.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

The morning duties are ended, and through the blessings of that *All Ruling Being* I am allowed the privilege and pleasure of communing with you. I received some days since a letter from Uncle John White, informing me of your visit to him, and of the news of his vicinity, but which it is not necessary to mention as I presume that all is probably already known to you. . . . I also received a letter from Cousin E—— C——, informing me of the marriage of Cousin I——, her sister, of her own recovered health, and of the prospects of her promising brothers, B—— and W——. She also stated that the health of Aunt and Uncle Williams was good. But she had not heard from you since my visit. If your eyes should become so as to allow of your writing without pain, then try and drop her a note, for truly she is one of your friends. But I hope that you will not strain your eyes for the purpose of writing to any one. You can at least send her your card and an occasional message by some of the lawyers. (The relative referred to lived in Clarksburg, Virginia. The more prominent lawyers of that place attended the courts held at Beverley.) I feel much concern about your eyes, for fear that you will strain them. Remember that the best physicians are opposed to straining that important organ; and when it fails, or begins to fail, naturally, that they recommend spectacles. But this should be the last resort, and should only be used when necessary. For instance, some persons can walk about out-of-doors and indoors without the light hurting their eyes, but must use the auxiliary in reading. The great objection to spec-

tacles is that when their use is once commenced, it must be generally continued through life. A person in purchasing a pair should select the lowest number which will answer the proposed end ; and then, as circumstances require, increase it. But I would advise you not to use them as long as you can do without them, at the same time avoiding pain. My eyes were so weak some months since that I could not look long at objects through the window ; and to look out-of-doors was frequently painful, though but for a moment ; and I was reduced to the necessity of masking my looking glass, on account of its reflection. I could not look at a candle, not even for a second, without pain. I consulted my physician, and he told me not to use them, and at the same time to avoid spectacles. I did so, and at present I can read a letter of three or four pages without feeling any inconvenience of consequence. My health is improving, and my strength is returning. I have so strictly adhered to my wholesome diet of stale bread and plainly dressed meat (having nothing on it but salt) that I prefer it now to almost anything else. The other evening I tasted a piece of bread with butter on it, and then the bread without it, and rather gave my preference to the unbuttered bread ; and hence I may never taste any more of this once much relished seasoning. And I think if you would adopt for your breakfast a cup of moderately strong black tea, stale wheat bread (wheat bread raised, and not less than twenty-four hours old), fresh meat—broiled or roasted is best—the yolk of one or two eggs—the white is hardly worth eating as it requires digestion and affords but little nutrition. For dinner the same kind of bread and meat, one vegetable only, say peas, beans or this year's potatoes, and for drink, plain water. For tea, the same kind of bread and

drink as for breakfast, and nothing else, unless you choose a little butter. The great beauty of the foregoing is that it furnishes all the nutrition which food can give, and at the same time does not interfere in the digestive process like other substances, such as salt meats, cabbage, lettuce, desserts, such as pies, preserves, nuts and all kinds of sweetmeats. Of what I have recommended, you can eat as much as your appetite craves, provided that you take regular meals and plenty of exercise, say, not less than three hours per day. I presume that your daily duties require you to be moving probably that much. Salt meats may be eaten, but fresh is preferable. And I regard green tea and coffee so injurious to the nerves that you should always prefer water to either. Now if you can make up your mind to adopt the foregoing for one year, I think that you will probably never wish to change it; and that, after using such diet for two or three months, you may experience marked advantage from it. But you must bear in mind that your meals must be at fixed hours. If you arise at five or six o'clock, and go to bed at nine or ten, then seven would be a good hour for breakfast, one for dinner, and seven for tea. And you ought always to retire to bed before eleven. If you should conclude to adopt the foregoing, do not taste other things of which you are fond, unless it be fruits, and they should be ripe. I think that a small quantity of fruit, eaten when ripe, and in the fore part of the day, is advantageous. You should try and forget that you are infirm, and pay no attention to your symptoms, as most any person can, by being too attentive to every little pain. Remember that good wholesome food taken at proper times is one of the best of medicines. I shall have hopes of your improvement when you have resolved

to taste nothing of which you are fond except such things as I have mentioned. If you commence on this diet, remember that it is like a man joining the temperance society: if he afterwards tastes liquor he is gone.

T. J. JACKSON.

Fort Hamilton, December 3, 1849.

MY DEAR SISTER:

With much pleasure I received your letter a few days since. I am not certain as to the amount due Miss N——, but I believe it to be two dollars and fifty cents; but if she says three or three dollars and fifty cents, I am satisfied to take her word for it. Keep my books in your care. I hope to come next fall. I should be much pleased could I spend with you the present winter. My disease is improving, for which I feel thankful to *Omnipotent God*, from whom every blessing cometh. I believe that my infirmity is dyspepsia, not of a dangerous character, but of a nervous one. . . . I sympathize with you in your late bereavement.¹ Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and family. The weather here is at present disagreeable and the place rather dull. I returned a few days since from Carlisle, where I had a pleasant week among its amiable and I might say lovely ladies. This is my third trip there on courts martial.

Your brother,

Mrs. L. A. Arnold.

THOMAS.

Fort Hamilton, January 7, 1850.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Again I am permitted by an indulgent Providence to say that I am still among the living, and continue able to correspond with an endeared and only sister. My

¹ Death of a sister of her husband, resulting from an accident.

health I believe is still improving. My strength certainly is. I cannot take so much exercise as desirable, owing to a sore foot. I can sympathize with you in such bereavements as you speak of. Uncle Cummins is in California. I received from Cousin Mary H—— a letter a few days since, in which she states that uncle had written to her from near Sacramento City. When I return home I shall want to take considerable exercise, and expect that by continuing it, with the mountain air, to receive great benefit. The winter here has been quite mild; it is snowing slightly to-day. I should like very much to spend this winter with you; certainly it would be more congenial to my feelings. Do you ever see Judge Lee, S. L. Hayes, J. S. Carlisle, Dr. McCally and Jos. Johnston?¹ If so, please give them my kindest regards. Does the stage run from Staunton to Beverley? How can I get to Beverley from Baltimore? Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold, to the balance of the family, and to my other friends and relatives. Let me hear from you soon.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

*Fort Hamilton, New York Harbor,
March 8, 1850.*

MY DEAR SISTER:

I regret that circumstances prevented my writing at the first of the month, but I suppose you will not feel much offended when you receive this of the 8th. I re-

¹ The persons named were friends of the family, Judge Lee, later of the Supreme Court of Virginia, Hon. Samuel L. Hayes, Member of Congress, John S. Carlisle, later Member of Congress and United States Senator, and Joseph Johnston, afterwards Governor of Virginia; Dr. James McCally had been his father's family physician—each of whom had shown Major Jackson personal kindness.

ceived yours, and also the *National Intelligencer* containing the speech of Mr. Clay. Your letter was read with pleasure, and the speech should have met with a like reception, but I feared to use my eyes to that extent, though they have improved greatly as well as my general health. When I was in your town my weight was about one hundred and thirty-three pounds, and a few days since it was one hundred and sixty-six pounds, being two pounds more than I remember of having ever weighed before. When circumstances admit of it, my exercise partakes of the most active kind, such as running, leaping, swinging, etc. My diet is, as formerly, of a plain character, but wholesome and nutritious. I hope that my dear little niece has entirely recovered her health, but do you not think, my dear sister, that her illness has been the result of a Divine decree? Within the past few years I have endeavored to live more nearly unto God. And now nothing earthly could induce me to return to the world again. My life is not one of privation, as you sometimes see among Christians, but I enjoy the pleasures of the world, but endeavor to restrict them within the limits which Nature's God has assigned to them. Do you not remember that I told you that I believed that God would restore me to perfect health, and such continues to be my belief. . . . For my part, I am willing to go hence when it shall be His great will to terminate my earthly career. Hence you, knowing His will as set forth in His holy Word, easily observe how strictly I will adhere to your advice, given some time since; and truly it was good advice, and such as I would not violate to save my head. Yes, my dear sister, rather than willfully violate the known will of God I would forfeit my life; it may seem strange to you, yet nevertheless such a

resolution I have taken, and I will by it abide. My daily prayers are for your salvation, and some of my prayerful petitions have been answered. Remember me kindly to Mr. Arnold, to my relatives, and speak to the little children of their Uncle Thomas.

Sincerely your much attached brother,
THOMAS.

P. S. We have just received Mr. Webster's speech, delivered yesterday in the Senate, and it is truly noble, and I am of the opinion that Mr. Arnold will be much pleased with it.—T. J. J.

In the following letter mention is made of the probability of Major Jackson being transferred from Fort Hamilton to Fort Washington opposite Mount Vernon. From some cause this order was not issued, and the transfer did not take place, as he was evidently at no time stationed at that military post.

Fort Hamilton, April 1, 1850.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter came safe to hand, and with pleasure its contents were read. During the past month our stables were burnt. All the horses were saved, though mine, with several others, were injured a little. The damage was near four thousand dollars. I regret to say that circumstances will prevent my return home this summer, but on the 1st of October I expect to be ordered to Fort Washington, opposite Mount Vernon, when I expect to get a leave and visit you during some portion of that month, or of the succeeding one. My health continues to improve. My muscles have become quite solid. My exercises are of a violent character, when the chil-

blains on my feet do not prevent it. I hope that little Ann¹ has entirely recovered. When I make my proposed visit I shall endeavor to take with me such things as your letter has specified, provided that they are attainable. Some of them may be difficult to get. My past winter has been much more pleasant than the preceding. The weather here is at present delightful; but in a few days it may be the reverse, as it is much influenced here on the seaboard by the direction of the winds. On Thursday last I, in company with eighteen others, had a grand sleigh ride. It was the best snow of the season, but in twenty-four hours there was hardly a trace of it to be found.

Sincerely your brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. Remember me to Mr. A—— and family.

Plattsburg Barracks, N. Y., May 10, 1850.

MY DEAR SISTER :

You observe that I am now on the borders of Canada. It is for the purpose of trying some prisoners. My health is still improving and in a short time I expect to return to Fort Hamilton. In coming here I have passed some charming scenery. This place is on the western shore of Lake Champlain. I should like very much to visit Montreal and Quebec before returning south, but want of time and money will prevent it. On my way here I saw the old Fort Ticonderoga and Crown Point; and in front of this garrison was fought the great naval action of the late war (1812). Remember me very kindly to Mr. A—— and family.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

¹ The writer's sister, Anna Grace.

Fort Hamilton, New York Harbor, July 6, 1850.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have received yours, and in reply can say that my health is still improving. Your request shall be attended to, but it will be necessary to wait until my arrival, as I know of no safe mode of conveyance. You speak of your fruit and flowers. I cannot indulge in the luxury of the former, but in the latter I take great interest, and I hope that you may always cultivate them. It shows a refined taste to abound in admiration for the beautiful, and it has the additional advantage of endearing children to their homes. With pleasure they must, through the different periods of their lives, look back to their garden, filled with beautiful flowers, and when they see the same flowers, even in distant countries, how vividly will it recall to mind their home, their mother, father, brothers, sisters and all their early associations. I will not get home this summer, but have some hopes of coming in October; but I cannot say what the result will be. How can I get through those mountains during the winter season? I wish that I could come and spend the entire winter with you, but such, I fear, will be impracticable. Do not make any calculations, but expect me when circumstances will best admit of my taking a leave. I have recently received a letter from Uncle John White, and Aunt Catharine. The family are well. Uncle Jack and Aunt Nancy are dead. (Uncle Jack Robinson and Aunt Nancy, colored slaves.) Uncle (John White) had recently received a letter from our cousins in California, and they say that Uncle Cummins is dead. This is news that goes to my heart. Uncle was a father to me. (This is the uncle, Cummins E. Jackson, with whom he had made his boyhood home.) I want to bring Thomas a

good violin, if neither you nor Mr. A—— has any objection to his learning to play on one. Remember me kindly to Mr. A—— and family.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

The concluding sentence in the above letter possibly calls for some explanation which would not at that time have been deemed necessary. In the period in which it was written the violin, or fiddle, was in very many communities regarded by a majority of the devout as Satan's own instrument, invented by him for the one and sole purpose of luring the youthful from the narrow path, and enticing them within his realms. In more enlightened communities this prejudice was disappearing, but a number of years subsequent to the date referred to, while on a visit in a distant county I recall the ominous shake of the head, accompanied with disparaging remarks of surprise, at the grown-up son of a very pious Methodist class-leader being allowed by his parents to own a fiddle, and to keep it at his father's home. No objection on any such grounds would have had influence in the home of my parents, however. I remember having had such an instrument, and it is more than probable the above letter explains the manner in which it was obtained. The next letter was written from Fort Ontario, New York, and bears date :

August 10, 1850.

MY DEAR SISTER :

You are probably surprised at hearing from me so frequently at different points as a member of courts mar-

tial. I am now about twelve hours' travel from Niagara Falls, and consequently intend visiting there before returning home. I will leave here in the evening, and be at the Falls next morning. The court will probably remain in session for several days. Fort Ontario is situated on the lake of the same name, and in view of the city of Oswego. If circumstances permit me to return home to Virginia this coming fall, how can I get to your town most conveniently from Washington City? My health is still improving, but is as yet so delicate as to render much regularity necessary, and it is probable that I am more particular in my rules than any person of your acquaintance. I fear that I will be a good deal exposed in crossing the mountains, unless there is a stage line through from eastern Virginia. When you write let me know what kind of flowers, plants, etc., are in your gardens, and what kind you would like for me to bring. I expect that I can obtain almost every description in New York. I am to commence staying at a water cure establishment this evening, where I expect to remain during my stay here. I have great faith in them for such infirmities as mine. I have been for some months adopting it to a certain extent, and with advantage. Remember me very kindly to Mr. A—— and the family.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

In the following letter he describes an official visit to West Point, the first since his graduation from the academy.

West Point, N. Y., September 3, 1850.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I am again at my first military station, and a very pleasant visit it is. Here I see objects which recall many

pleasant and agreeable associations of my youth ; but it is my lot to meet but few of my comrades of those bygone days. All other things are visible, though changed. One of my former barracks is torn down, and another constructed. But among the existing and unaltered objects are the garden of Kosciusko, his monument,¹ Fort Putnam, in which Andre was confined, and from which Arnold escaped after his unsuccessful attempt to sell his command. Here too is the Plain, the military works, and, above all, the grand and lofty mountains. I am on a general court martial which will soon adjourn. I have been quite unwell, and had it not been for my judicious application of water, I cannot say what would have been the consequence. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and family.

Your brother,
T. J. JACKSON.

¹ In 1828 a monument to the Polish hero, General Thaddeus Kosciusko, was erected at the northeast angle of Fort Clinton, overlooking the river. The monument had been designed by Mr. J. H. Latrobe, a talented and distinguished member of the class of 1822. Each cadet contributed twenty-five cents from his monthly pay towards the erection, and the small surplus which remained from the fund was appropriated to the marble basin in the grotto known as Kosciusko's garden.—“Reminiscences of West Point in the olden time, etc.”

XI

FORT MEADE (1850-1851)

ABOUT this period Major Jackson was transferred from Fort Hamilton to Fort Meade, Florida, located some fifty miles inland from Tampa. Before proceeding to Florida he made the expected visit to my parents at Beverley. I recall distinctly his stay with us on this occasion, and have a very vivid recollection of some of the articles he brought with him. Among these was his artillery sabre which he had carried in the campaign in Mexico. It was the first sword I had ever seen, and I was greatly impressed with it. I was also much interested in a large tablespoon; there was a small oblong block of some metallic composition, soldered to the centre of the bowl, about one-fourth by one-half inch in size. It was claimed that in using it one would be enabled to detect any poison that might be placed in food by its appearance on this metal block. He also had a beautiful ink-stand, with a pair of doves mounted on it, of Mexican manufacture, presumably a remembrance from some fair Señorita friend of the city of Mexico; also a pair of large Mexican spurs with beautifully engraved leather straps.¹ I think it

¹ The artillery sabre referred to has since come into my possession and with the ink-stand and one of the spurs mentioned are among my most highly prized relics.—T. J. A.

was on the occasion of this visit to us that he brought me a small brass cannon mounted on wheels, a musket with tin barrel and bayonet, a tin sword with scabbard, belt straps, cap, etc. ; so that, when fully equipped in all of this military paraphernalia, I felt very fine.

Just how long Major Jackson remained with my parents at this time, or the date of his departure, I do not remember, but probably for one or two months. There is nothing saved from his correspondence covering the period intervening between his departure and arrival at his new post at Fort Meade. It would seem from Major Jackson's letters, written to his sister while at Fort Meade, that he had undergone quite a change of opinion from his former expressed preference for a civil pursuit in life, such as the profession of law ;¹ and he expresses a very decided preference for the pursuit of arms. Whether such change was brought about by his experiences and success in the Mexican campaign, and an unquenchable longing for a repetition of that experience, or whether his life and associations at Fort Hamilton, and the numerous courts martial held at different points which he attended, being detailed as a member of such courts, were so congenial to his temperament, does not appear. But it would seem probable that the excitement of battle had left its impress, when one reads, "I like scouting very much, . . . but it would be still more desirable if I could have an occasional encounter with Indian parties." There would seem to be ever afterwards some over-

¹See letters of date January 28, 1844, and August 2, 1845, pp. 62, 71.

whelming attraction or lure hidden within the breast of him who has at any period of his life engaged in the hot fire of battle. He not only never forgets, but seems to long for the excitement that is only to be found in the midst of the conflict. It is astonishing how many men long past the meridian of life, who had been in active service throughout the Civil War, immediately following the declaration of war against Spain eagerly tendered to the government their services, and not from patriotism alone; and were greatly disappointed when such offer was not accepted. A large proportion of the persons so described were not only men of family, but settled in business, and in many instances in comfortable circumstances, some holding important and lucrative offices: as illustrations, one was Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of his state; one an elderly and dearly beloved clergyman, in active work. Other instances were known to me among my personal friends. The large majority of these gentlemen were ever afterwards very reticent about the fact of having made offer of their services, and exhibited little disposition to discuss the matter, the subject presumably having become somewhat worn in their family circles. The first letter of those preserved written from Major Jackson's new post is dated:

Fort Meade, Fla., March 1, 1851.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your very sister-like letter has been received and its contents read with much pleasure, although the writing was in rather a small hand. You must not suppose

that I would like to see —— profess religion without possessing it. A hypocrite is, in my judgment, one of the most detestable of beings. My opinion is that every one should honestly and carefully investigate the Bible, and then if he can believe it to be the word of *God*, to follow its teachings. . . . My pay is seventy dollars per month, but as I receive fourteen dollars for extra duties, it amounts to eighty-four dollars per month. You are very kind in offering me assistance in case that I should enter civil life. It is doubtful whether I shall relinquish the military profession, as I am very partial to it. Should I do so, however, I hope that I will never stand in need of any pecuniary assistance. All the aid which will be desired will be in obtaining fame. You say that I must live on it for the present. I say not only for the present, but during life. What do you mean by the sword, and of my friend Hayes turning Whig? Remember me very kindly to Mr. A——. Florida, so far as I have seen it, is a vast plain, with occasional slight elevations. It is covered with beautiful forests of pine—the yellow pine growing on the elevations, and the pitch pine on the lowlands. The country is filled with lakes and swamps. The soil is very sandy and generally very thin. It produces corn and most northern productions, with the exceptions of wheat, rye, oats and barley, where the soil is good. It produces most excellent sugar and cotton, but is peculiarly adapted to the growth of the sweet potato, which sometimes grows more than two feet in length and eighteen inches in circumference.¹ But the most profitable occupation here is raising cattle. Here a cow and calf will cost ten dollars. All that is necessary

¹ I have been informed by residents of Central Florida that sweet potatoes of this size are not unusual.—T. J. A.

is to buy a sufficient number, and turn them into the woods, hunt them up every year, mark and brand them. The owner neither feeds nor salts them. When the steers become three, four, five, six and seven years old, they are sold at from seven to sixteen dollars, and carried by sea to Nassau, Key West, or elsewhere for consumption. There is plenty of game here, such as deer and turkey; also some bear, tigers¹ and panther. I have just returned from an eight days' scout, in which I saw about twenty deer in one forenoon. I could find no Indians. I travelled more than one hundred miles without seeing a house. I like scouting very much, as it gives me a relish for everything; but it would be still more desirable if I could have an occasional encounter with Indian parties. I have been on several sugar plantations in Florida. They present the appearance of a large farm covered with luxuriant corn. Eatables here are very dear; eggs are from thirty-seven to fifty cents per dozen; corn between one and two dollars per bushel; hens fifty cents each, etc. I wish that I could not only see you every year but every day. Give my thanks to Mr. A—— for his kindness. Any attentions shown to Mr. Hayes or to Mr. Carlisle by you will be considered as personal favors to myself, for they have both rendered me great services, and are my warm friends. How far does Mr. C—— live from you, for when I visit Beverley I must see him.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

Fort Meade, Fla., April 2, 1851.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your affectionate letter has been received and read

¹ The local name for the catamount and which is also called puma in that state.

with much pleasure. I should think from the tone of them—the last few—that your health has improved very much, although you do not say so in so many words. I have hopes of being able to live near you for a while. I received a letter from Colonel Smith, the superintendent of the Virginia Military Institute at Lexington (Va.), in which he kindly offers to present my name to the Board of Visitors, in June next, as a candidate for the Professorship in Natural and Experimental Philosophy in the Institute. I have accepted his offer, but am unable to say whether I shall be elected. If I knew who would compose the Board, then I could form a better idea. If I have a few friends on it, my chance will probably be good. I consider the position both conspicuous and desirable. I will be in about one hundred and fifty or one hundred and sixty miles from you, will have quarters, and receive twelve hundred dollars per year. Philosophy is my favorite subject. I hope through the blessings of Providence to succeed in securing the post. I have heard that the Hon. Joseph Johnson is to be our governor. Is it Joseph Johnson of Harrison (County)? If so, I am much pleased, as he has befriended me on more than one occasion. I believe that John Stringer (of Lewis County, and friend of the family) will probably be on the Board of Visitors in June next. This information I received by yesterday's mail. Where does he live? I see that Mr. Carlisle has been making two speeches in the convention. I look upon him as one of the promising sons of Virginia. I hope before long to see him in Congress.¹ I am much pleased at seeing Cousin Wm. L. Jackson also in the convention. Indeed I have some hopes that our ancient

¹ Hon. Jno. S. Carlisle of Harrison County, Va. Afterwards served in Congress and the United States Senate.

reputation may be revived.¹ I might have sent this letter sooner, but I designedly delayed it to see if yesterday's mail (6th of April) would not enable me to give you some good news, but I did not receive the information which I was waiting for; but in my next I hope to be in possession of agreeable tidings for you, but I am not over-sanguine. I received a few days since a very kind and well wishing letter from General John J. Jackson.² When I visit you I want also to visit him. I find that I have many friends. Indeed I have found that all to whom I apply for assistance are ready to give me a helping hand. The general's letter was particularly gratifying to me. I shall not attempt a theological discussion with you at present, hoping to see you during the present year, when I hope that you will have all of your questions and ideas prepared for the investigation of your brother. Remember me very kindly to Mr. A——, to Aunt White, to Uncle, Cousin John, Uncle S——, Colonel Goff and other friends.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

The following brief note was evidently written at Major [Jackson's] dictation, as it is not in his handwriting.

Fort Meade, Florida, April 22, 1851.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Good news. I have been elected Professor of Natural and Experimental Philosophy in the Virginia Military Institute, and you may expect me home in the latter part of June.

YOUR BROTHER.

¹ Wm. L. Jackson and John S. Carlisle were members of the Virginia Constitutional Convention then in session in Richmond.

² A very distinguished relative. A graduate of the United States Military Academy at West Point of the class of 1815. Later served on Andrew Jackson's staff in Florida.

P. S. I am recovering from a recent attack of sickness and owing to the weakness of my eyes do not like to write myself.

Fort Meade, Florida, May 16, 1851.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I expect to leave for home next week or the week after. My health is better than it has been for years, except my eyes, which are still weak.

Your affectionate brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

The vacant professorship at the Virginia Military Institute would seem to have been a position much coveted by young army officers, if the names that were before the Board of Visitors in connection with the position are any criterion. Among other applicants were George B. McClellan,¹ Jesse L. Reno,² W. S. Rosecrans, later distinguished generals of the Federal army, and General G. W. Smith of the Confederate army—all of them noted for high scholarship and for gallant services in Mexico. Judging from the expressions in Major Jackson's letters, he was extremely anxious to get the appointment. It not only promised a continuance in a semi-military life, at a most desirable location, within accessible

¹ McClellan, who had served on Scott's staff with Lee in Mexico, and of whom Lee, after the close of the Civil War, said, "He was by all odds the ablest general the Federals had." See "Recollections of General Lee," by his son, Captain R. E. Lee, Jr., page 416. General Lee made substantially the same statement as that above quoted in reply to a remark on my part that many persons regarded McClellan as the ablest general the Federals had in the war.—T. J. A.

² A native of Wheeling, (W.) Virginia, Jackson's own state.

distance of his sister and his former home and friends; it offered better compensation, an opportunity to continue his studies in his favorite branch of science, a more settled life, a regular annual vacation for the summer months, instead of the uncertain frequent change of service from one military post to another, at distant inaccessible points, and this with little opportunity afforded for promotion, or for distinguishing one's self—the service being confined to occasional skirmishes with Indians and routine daily duties incident of army-post life. In other words, as expressed years afterwards by a distinguished Confederate general, who had seen much of such service, "He had learned all about commanding a squadron of cavalry, but he had forgotten everything else he knew."

Major Jackson had taken active steps at once upon being informed of the vacancy to enlist such influence as he and his friends could possibly exercise towards securing his appointment to the professorship. Among his relatives and friends were a number who were quite influential, and loyal and untiring in their devotion to whatever cause they espoused. So notwithstanding the efforts before the Board of Visitors in behalf of his distinguished competitors, he, on the 28th of March, 1851, received the appointment to fill the chair of Natural and Experimental Philosophy and Artillery.

From Fort Meade he went to New York, and from there to Western Virginia, where he remained quite a while visiting his sister and other relatives,

in the time intervening before the date for entry upon his new duties. I can recall this visit very distinctly, as I was then large enough to accompany Major Jackson in his daily walks. I remember upon one of these occasions in returning home we passed the residence of Rev. Thomas Collett, a short distance north of town. We were walking in the road. When we were nearly opposite the residence, which stood some sixty yards back, a large savage dog came running towards us from the house. I was a good deal alarmed, as I knew the reputation of the dog was bad. My uncle told me not to be afraid, but to keep close to him. He did not carry a stick, and as I had no idea that he knew how savage the dog was, his remark did not relieve my apprehension. I, however, observed his injunction to keep close to him. I noticed that Major Jackson looked steadily at the face of the dog. The dog came bounding directly towards us; he was very ferocious in appearance. When within about thirty feet, he stopped suddenly, turned and ran from us towards the house as fast as he could go, as I thought, completely cowed and scared. My uncle told me he looked the dog steadily in the eye. I have never since seen any one do this with such success. It made a deep impression upon my mind at the time, and I thought he certainly was a wonderful man.¹

¹In the "Life of Thomas J. Jackson" by an ex-cadet (Mr. James Dabney McCabe) the following incident is related: that Jackson had, in the line of duty, preferred charges against a cadet which resulted in the

In this connection the following quotation from the letter from Mr. Sylvanus White addressed to me and heretofore mentioned is given: "In the spring of 1851 I returned temporarily from California, and was at home (residence of his parents in Lewis County, (W.) Va.), when Thomas (Major Jackson) came from Florida to fill his position at Lexington, Virginia. I was with him nearly two days. We stayed over night at the old mill place (Cummins E. Jackson's former home). There were no other whites there that night, only the negroes (slaves). He and I slept in the same bed. In talking of Mexico, he was telling me of the heroism of other officers. I said, 'I want you to tell me of your own.' He replied, 'Oh, if I have to blow my own horn, it will be a long time before it is blown.' He finally consented to tell me something about the capture of the city and what a difficult time he had going up to the heights of Chapultepec. He said there was a concealed battery opened on him which cut down half of his men and horses. He said he had great difficulty in getting his men to take a position to go up. I said in that case I should have dropped back for reinforcements. 'Oh, never,' he re-

latter's dismissal from the Institute. The cadet stated to his friends that he had armed himself and intended to kill Jackson. A friend of Jackson met the latter on his way from the village to the Institute and warned him that this cadet was awaiting him on the road for that purpose, and advised Jackson to turn back. Jackson refused to do so, remarking, "Let the assassin murder me if he will." When he reached the place where the young man was waiting for him, he turned to him and gazed calmly at him. The young man turned away in silence, and Major Jackson continued his walk.

plied. 'It would have been no disgrace to have died there, but to have failed to gain my point it would.' He said when assailing the city when he fired he could see a lane cut through the enemy. He said he always aimed or sighted his own gun. He was expecting to go right into the city, but was ordered to halt at an outer gate for a time. The next day after that night we separated, to meet no more. The following occurrence made an impression on me. We met with an old acquaintance. After some exchange of words, Thomas remarked, 'Richard, you ought to have been a topographical engineer.' 'Yes,' he replied, 'but the great misfortune was my father was born first.' When we rode on, I said, 'What did Dick mean by that expression?' He replied, 'That he had always been tied down at home.' He (Thomas) said he always donated one-tenth of his income to some charitable object or institution; that the government was liberal with him and he could afford it." Immediately following the summer vacation, he visited for a short time several of the Virginia medicinal springs, which were quite noted for their curative qualities, and were at that period very largely patronized by visitors from all sections of the South. From there he proceeded to Lexington to enter upon his new duties as a professor at the Virginia Military Institute.

XII

VIRGINIA MILITARY INSTITUTE (1851-1852)

MAJOR JACKSON reached Lexington the latter part of September in time to enter upon his new duties at the opening session of the Institute. The first letter written after his arrival bears date :

Lexington, Va., October 8, 1851.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have had the pleasure of receiving your letter, and the articles which you sent to me. I have seen Mr. Cowen and requested him to call on you, and have made a similar request of Mr. Henderson. He is the brother-in-law of Colonel Smith. I am much obliged for the articles. An opportunity will hardly be offered for visiting you this winter. I have received a letter from Cousin Margaret N——; she as well as our other relatives are well. The academic duties commenced on yesterday a week. My health has through the blessings of Providence been so much improved as to enable me to enter on my duties, with which I am delighted. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and the family, and to all inquiring relatives and friends. And say to Mr. A—— that I hope to be able by his assistance to get some fine fossil specimens from his farm when I next visit Beverley. I remember having seen some beautiful specimens of

shells near the (Beaver Creek) bridge, above Mrs. B——'s. These he showed me in 1848.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

And then he writes :

Lexington, Va., November 1, 1851.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Again I am blessed with the privilege of communing with you. My duties are ended for the week, I may say, as in my department there will be no more recitations this week. But at four o'clock the faculty have a weekly meeting at the superintendent's. I have an invitation to a party this evening, but must decline going. I admire the citizens of this place very much. Accept of my thanks for the present. How is Thomas and all the family? I hope to see you next summer. I had a pleasant time at the Springs, but only visited the Rockbridge Alum, the Bath Alum and the Warm Springs. I saw the blowing cave; it is a remarkable curiosity. There is at one time a strong current of air rushing out, and at another time a strong current rushing in. There has never been but one opening found to the cave. It is in Bath County, and about eight miles from the Bath Alum Springs. My love to all.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

*Virginia Military Institute,
Lexington, Va., Jan. 10, 1852.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter has, like almost every other good, brought with it pain. But I hope that your health will

again return among the blessings of Providence to brighten the remainder of your days, as well as those of mine. I have been desirous of writing at an earlier day, but our examinations and other duties have prevented my doing so ; and even now this pleasing task is performed during the height of the examination. It could be delayed no longer without a degree of pain, which your brother is unwilling to experience on this subject. This trying ordeal will close about Thursday next. . . . The best plan that I can conceive for an unbeliever in *God*, as presented to us in the Bible, is to first consider things with reference merely to expediency. Now considering the subject with reference to expediency only, let us examine whether it is safer to be a Christian or an infidel. Suppose that two persons, one a Christian, and the other an infidel, to be closing their earthly existences. And suppose that the infidel is right, and the Christian is wrong ; they will then after death be upon an equality. But instead of the infidel being right, suppose him to be wrong, and the Christian right ; then will the state of the latter after death be inestimably superior to that of the other. And if you will examine the history of mankind, it will be plain that Christianity contributes much more to happiness in this life than that of infidelity. Now having briefly glanced at this subject, to what decision are we forced on the mere ground of expediency ; certainly it is to the adoption of Christianity. Having made our selection of Christianity, the next point is to consider whether we can believe the teachings of the *sacred* volume ; if so, then its adoption should of necessity follow. I have examined the subject maturely, and the evidence is very conclusive ; and if we do not receive the Bible as being authentic and credible, we must reject every other

ancient work, as there is no other in favor of which so much evidence can be adduced. . . . I have not yet been able to procure the peaches of which I spoke in my former letter. Cousin H—— has returned from her visit to Point Pleasant, which was to her very pleasant. Uncle Minor Neale's daughter has returned home (Vicksburg, Miss.) with her grandfather, who came north for her. Talk to Thomas and Grace for me, and tell them that their uncle is very much obliged to them, and that they must continue to be good children, and do what their mother and father may require of them. Remember me very kindly to all inquiring friends and relatives. I should be pleased to see a literary institution in Beverley, but I cannot see how to be serviceable to it. If you will state in your next letter what I would have to do here, I would be enabled to give you a more definite answer.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

*Virginia Military Institute,
Lexington, Va., Feb. 7, 1852.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

Though much pressed with business and far behind in my correspondence, I cannot defer any longer a letter to you. Our examination has closed, and academic duties have been resumed. Next week I hope to take up the subject of optics. The approaching summer is looked forward to by me with no small degree of interest, as our vacation will commence after the 4th of July. Your health I hope is completely restored before this time. Mine is still delicate. When did you last hear from Parkersburg, and how are our relatives and friends ? Do you see anything of Uncle John White's family ? The weather here has been extremely cold, but at the

present it is lovely. I have not heard from you for weeks upon weeks. Remember me very kindly to Mr. A—— and the family, and to all inquiring friends.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

*Virginia Military Institute,
Lexington, Va., Feb. 21, 1852.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your welcome letter, inclosing that of our cousin, has been received, and with no small regret do I consider your past afflictions, but we are all the children of suffering and sorrow in this world. Whilst it has many pleasures, it is not nor will not be divested of its cares. Amid affliction let us hope for happiness. But divest us of hope, and how miserable would we be. It has never forsaken me, nor in my humble opinion ever will. However dark the night, I am cheered with an anticipated glorious and luminous morrow. May such ever be your happy lot. No earthly calamity can shake my hope in the future so long as God is my friend. And on this subject I expect to have a long conversation with you next summer. I feel ashamed of not having written to you earlier ; but even now I am debtor a number of letters in other quarters, which, in time, have the preference ; but my conscience will not be troubled at this species of fraud. I am glad that Cousin —— stopped with you. I received a letter from Cousin Sylvanus White¹ recently, in which he states that his location is in Missouri ; but for the future he cannot say to what quarter his steps will be directed. My health has improved. What do you propose doing next summer during my

¹ The relative whose letters have been quoted from several times herein.

visit? I suppose that plans you have in abundance. How are the family? Give my regards to all individually. Tell Thomas that I should like to have him with me sometimes very much, and that he must be at home the next time I visit him. Remember me to all inquiring friends and relatives. How is Cousin John White, and Aunt White?

Your brother,
THOMAS.

The next letter is dated :

*Virginia Military Institute,
Lexington, Va., April 10, 1852.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have nothing which can call for a letter from me at this time except the pleasure of writing to you, and to say a word in reference to your mentioned garden seed, etc. Tell me the precise kind of seed which are desirable, and, if you can, the mode of conveyance for them to Beverley. I might possibly procure some grafts of apricots and prunes, if they could only be sent to you. I sent for my box some time since, but have not yet obtained possession of it. This is a beautiful day, though the preceding few have been cold and have injured the fruit prospects, particularly of the apricots and other early-fruit. The plank road from Staunton to Buchanan, which latter place is about twenty-five miles distant from here, is now under construction through our town. The stage travels about one-third faster on it than on the dirt road. I am anxiously looking forward to July. When did you last hear from Cousin M——? She appears to have dropped me as a correspondent. I certainly gave her ostensible reason for so doing by not answering her

letter more promptly. But this was occasioned by pressure of other things. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold, the family, and to all inquiring friends and relatives. Tell Thomas and Grace that I am not going to allow them to see their Aunt Nancy¹ until they both agree to love me more than her. Tell them their aunt does not care about them half as much as I do.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

At the period when the above letter was written, it may be stated in explanation, garden seed and nursery stock were much more difficult to procure than at the present day ; at least this was true as to persons residing in the country and the smaller villages. The reference in the letter to the plank road would indicate this as the era of this supposed improvement in road building ; it was made of two inch boards, securely spiked down to stringers, though this did not prevent their warping. It was quite expensive. For the first few years of use it was a great improvement over the common dirt road ; after that, as the boards warped and became loose, it was anything but a pleasure to drive over.

*Virginia Military Institute,
Lexington, Va., May 14, 1852.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your welcome letter has been received, but you do not give me definite instructions about garden seed,

¹ Some maiden acquaintance about whom the family had been teasing him.

grafts, etc. I should think it would be useless to get any for you unless they are such as I can convey in person; for you may judge of the difficulty of getting anything from Lexington to Beverley from the fact that though I have used effort upon effort to procure the box which you sent to me, and have told the stage driver to spare no expense in procuring it, yet from his negligence, or from some other cause, it has not yet come to hand. I wish that you would either get Miss H—— to take it back to Beverley on her return, or else send a servant with it to the stage office at Staunton, and have it put on the way-bill and directed to me at Lexington, Va., to the care of E. Porter. I have recently received a letter from Cousin Margaret N——, which states that she is engaged in teaching a school, and that all of our relatives are well, and that Cousin Lizzie N——, daughter of Uncle Minor (Mr. Minor Neale of Vicksburg, Miss.), is on a visit and that she will probably remain north all summer. I hope that by this time your health is entirely restored. Though my manner of living is very abstemious, yet health has not returned with all its blessings. However, I am much better than when I last bid you good-bye. Remember me very kindly to Mr. A—— and the family. Tell Thomas and Grace that their aunt does not say a single word about either of them.¹ The weather has been very pleasant for the past two days, but to-day is part sunshine, part rain, and then a mixture of both. In Beverley there is probably snow to be seen, even this late in May. This evening we are to be favored with a vocal concert. I wish that you could accompany me. For my daily exercise I have to walk about a mile and a half for each meal—three-quarters to and three-quarters from it—and

¹ See note, page 184.

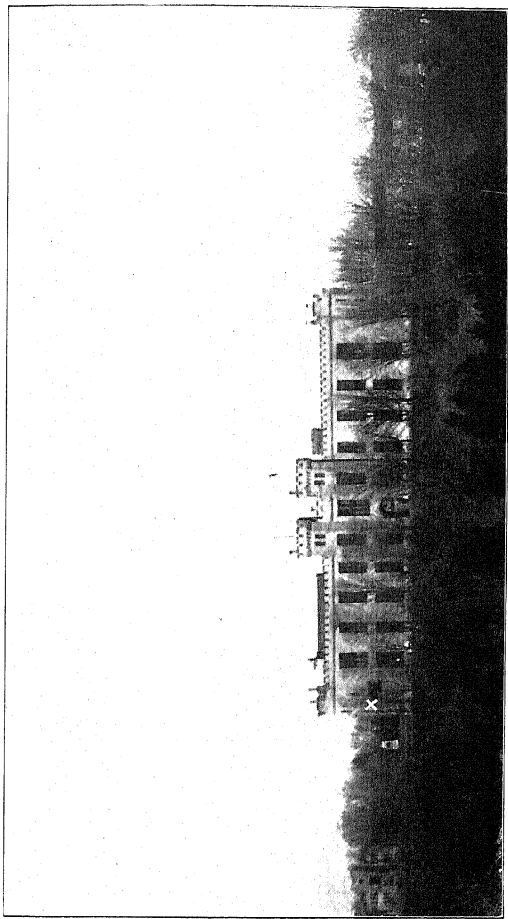
in the morning I usually walk about a mile and a half before breakfast, and in the afternoon about two miles or more before tea.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

*Virginia Military Institute,
Lexington, Va., June 5, 1852.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your welcome letter has come safe to hand. I regret that your health is not restored. Though impaired at present, let us hope to see the day when you will again enjoy that greatest of earthly blessings in perfection. Do not begin to look for me until the latter part of July. I may be with you in the first part, but of that I cannot speak definitely at present. My box has not yet arrived, but I have spoken to a friend, whose family lives in Staunton, to endeavor to have them forward it. I shall try to get some grafts to take with me. Is it a fur hat which I am to get for Thomas? If so, it would be desirable to have the measure of his head. The weather is quite cool here this morning, though for some time back it has been very warm. The people are beginning to visit the Alum Springs. I wish that you could see our Institute, for I consider that it is the most tasty edifice in the state. We have had green peas for some time, and the strawberries are, I believe, beginning to disappear, but the cherries are just coming in season. . . . I am enjoying myself more than I have done for some years, but still my health requires much care and rigid regard to diet. I hope that the news may be true that Uncle Cummins has returned; to meet him will be a proud day of my life. He has certainly been a good *friend* to me. Have you heard anything from Cousin



VIRGINIA MILITARY INSTITUTE, LEXINGTON.

x Jackson's section room.

THOMAS J. (STONEWALL) JACKSON 187

E. J. Jackson? A bill has recently passed our State Legislature which appropriates \$30,000 for the purpose of completing our barracks. We expect during the coming session to have about eighteen or twenty more cadets than at any previous one, and when the buildings shall be completed the accommodations will admit of upwards of two hundred. This past year we had to refuse admission to a large number. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and the family, and to all inquiring friends and relatives.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

P. S. I hope that you will not make any calculations as to the manner of passing the present summer until after my arrival at Beverley.
T.

In explanation of the reference in the preceding letter to his uncle, Cummins E. Jackson, it may be stated that Major Jackson had heard that this uncle, who had gone to California in 1849, and whose death had subsequently been reported, had returned. Unfortunately the first information was correct, as he had died in the year 1850, as elsewhere stated herein.

The next letter was written and mailed from

Alum Springs, Rockbridge County,
July 12, 1852.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I arrived here yesterday in as good health as usual, and am delighted with the waters so far. The place is crowded, there being about four hundred visitors, and the accommodations being only adequate for two

hundred and seventy-five or three hundred. I succeeded in procuring half a bed, there being one room for four occupants. In a few days I hope to be better off. Though we have had but two beds to four persons in my quarters, yet the beds are good, and the servants and proprietors and their assistants are attentive. Boarding is ten dollars per week. This water I consider is the water of waters. This place is more crowded than any other in the mountains, and I have not heard of a single person who is dissatisfied, though my inquiries have been many. My appetite and digestion have already improved, and I indulge rather freely. My dinner was principally bread, which was rather fresh, potatoes and green corn, which is by no means digestible ; my supper rich corn bread, and the same for breakfast, using butter freely at each meal. Remember me very kindly to all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

P. S. This establishment was sold a few days since for one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

T. J. J.

From the Rockbridge Alum Springs Major Jackson came to Beverley, and after a short time spent at the home of my parents he, accompanied by my mother, visited their relatives in Parkersburg and vicinity, and from which visit they evidently derived a great deal of pleasure ; and after spending a week or more at the Mineral Wells near that place they returned to our home, having included in the return journey a brief visit with relatives in Weston and its

vicinity among his boyhood friends. After remaining some time at Beverley, he returned to Lexington, but in time, before resuming his duties at the Institute, to again make some stay at the Rockbridge Alum Springs, in the curative properties of which water he seemed to have great confidence.

XIII

VIRGINIA MILITARY INSTITUTE—*Continued* (1852-1853)

THE first letter from Major Jackson to his sister upon his return to the Military Institute following the visit described in the last chapter is dated :

Lexington, Va., September 7, 1852.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have not had even a line from you as yet. I hope that this is not the result of ill health. An improvement of health began to reward me for my visit to the Alum Springs within, as I believe, less than twenty-four hours after my arrival there. I remained at the Springs for three weeks, and then left with regret. The checks have not yet come to hand. Has the letter containing them been received by you? Our duties at the Institute have been resumed, and things promise well. I have for months back admired Lexington ; but now, for the first time, have I truly and fully appreciated it. Of all places which have come under my observation in the United States, this little village is the most beautiful. In a few days I hope to write a letter to Cousin H——. She is a lovely lady, and I am proud of her as a cousin. I wrote to Richard C—— and to Dr. B——, requesting them to join me at the Alum (Springs), but have heard

nothing from either of them. I hope that the baby¹ has entirely recovered, and that your health continues to improve. Remember me very kindly to the family and to all inquiring friends and relatives.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

P. S. Has Cousin Nancy returned home? How is Miss Eliza and Mrs. H——?

T. J. J.

Lexington, Va., October 9, 1852.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your kind letter has finally come safely to its place of destination. I felt much concerned about your long silence for fear that your health was bad. I have found on my return home that the peaches here were not so abundant as I had supposed, but there are great quantities of apples. Though peaches are not so plentiful, yet I have spoken to a person to secure me two or three bushels, and if he fails I will endeavor to obtain them by sending to Lynchburg, which is some forty miles distant; through that section, I have been informed, there is no scarcity. I hope that by this time the baby is entirely well, and that health and prosperity are among the number of your domestic blessings. My health has been much improved by visiting the Alum Springs. I have been and am still using the water, but its effects are not so good as when used at the Springs. Cousin H—— has written me a letter. . . . Cousin M—— is married, though of this you have probably already been informed. The weather is very warm and the ground is quite dry. What news have you from the letter containing the

¹ My brother Stark, who had been seriously ill.—T. J. A.

drafts? I wish you would let me know as soon as convenient whether there is any hope of getting possession of them. John Gittings¹ is doing very well. Remember me kindly to each member of the family, and to all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., October 25, 1852.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your very kind letter has come safe to hand, and I am glad to learn that you are enjoying as many blessings as still fall to your lot. I hope that by the time of the receipt of this that the children will all be in perfect health. George L——² has been here for about two weeks; he and Mr. Harrison,³ son of Judge Wm. Harrison of Clarksburg, purpose taking a course of law lectures this winter under Judge Brockenbrough. George is a young man of very fine mind, and I hope that he will acquit himself with much credit this winter. A young Mr. Stribling from Point Pleasant is also here. He is brother to the Miss S—— of whom I presume you have heard Cousin H—— speak. I hope that Cousin H—— will make a visit next summer to this most beautiful of places. I wish that you would forward me the checks by the first mail, as I am in need of them. The peaches have not yet come to hand, but as soon as they do I will forward them without delay. I weighed yesterday one hundred and seventy-two pounds and a fraction. This is six pounds more than any former weight. My health has much improved, and I hope that through the bless-

¹ A relative attending the Military Institute.

² A relative from Harrison County, (W.) Va.

³ Mr. Charles Harrison.

ings of *God* I will ultimately enjoy perfect health. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and the family, and to all inquiring friends.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., November 11, 1852.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter has been received with its enclosures, but it has brought sorrow to my heart to learn that your health is unusually delicate. My dear sister, my concern for you is great. . . . I fear that you give your thoughts too much to the things of this life. I expect that you have probably been devoting too great care to the articles which you spoke of forwarding to me. Now do not think any more about me in relation to them, but bear in mind that I have plenty of everything, except health, and that this has much improved. I hope that health will return to you with all of its blessings. . . . We have had a lovely fall in this portion of the state. My kindest regards to Mr. Arnold, the family and all inquiring friends.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

P. S. This morning I fired ten guns from the battery of artillery in commemoration of the origin of the Institute. This day thirteen years it went into operation,¹ and it is now in a very flourishing condition ; so much so that we cannot accommodate all the applicants.

T. J. J.

¹ November 11, 1858, I was present when a salute of nineteen guns was fired, which would correspond with the thirteen years mentioned in the letter. The fact that but ten guns were fired at that time would indicate a change in the salute at some subsequent period.—T. J. A.

Lexington, Va., December 11, 1852.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your kind letter has received the perusal of a brother, and I hope that though ill health is your present lot, that, notwithstanding, you will continue a buoyancy of spirits, and not give way to surrounding troubles. I too am a man of trouble. Yet, let the oppressing load be ever so great, it never sinks me beneath its weight. I trust that this will find you improving, if not well. Our session will have its semi-annual examination in the early part of the coming January. When did you last hear from Cousin ——? A cadet from Point Pleasant tells me that she has been there on a visit, but that she has returned home. Lexington has been very gay for some time back, owing to the marriage of one of the daughters of the late Governor McDowell. The weather is quite inclement at present. You must talk to Thomas and Grace for me, and tell them that their uncle frequently thinks of them, and that he would be very glad to have them with him. But that he does not like bad children. And always talk to them for me in such a manner as to make them better. I suppose that you have heard of Cousin Margaret's marriage. I am very busy this winter with studying and hearing recitations, having not only to prepare on natural philosophy and artillery, but to be in the section room three and four hours per day additional. My spare time is given to reading and to other sources of improvement. Your brother, THOMAS.

*Virginia Military Institute,
Lexington, Va., Feb. 1, 1853.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

I hope that ere this your health has improved, and that the returning spring will reanimate your feelings

and suggest the idea that it is but the symbol of the endless beauties and enjoyments of the world to come. The passage of Scripture from which I have derived sufficient support, whenever applied, is in the following words, "Acknowledge *God* in all thy ways, and He shall direct thy paths." What a comfort is this ! My dear sister, it is useless for men to tell me that there is no God, and that His benign influence is not to be experienced in prayer, when it is offered in conformity to the *Bible*. For some time past not a single day has passed by without my feeling His hallowing presence whilst at my morning prayers. I endeavor to live in accordance with the above passage, which means, as I understand it, in all thy ways acknowledge *God* and He shall take care of you in all respects. What better Protector can we desire than One who is Omnipotent, Omniscient and Omnipresent, and who hath promised that He will take care of us in all things, and in addition to all this, the pledge coming from *One* who cannot lie. Our weather here has been quite cold for some time back, but at present it is very beautiful, too much so to be of long duration, I fear. Persons, I believe, have generally filled their ice houses. I rather begin to despair of the peaches, as I have not seen a dried one, to my recollection, since returning home. You remember that during the past summer I was very much reduced in flesh ; at present I have more than desirable, and sometimes endeavor to reduce it ; but the nervousness with which I have been so much troubled, and the disagreeableness of cold feet induce me to adhere to the indulgence of the palate ; but my dishes are very plain ; generally brown bread is the principal article for breakfast and tea ; and sometimes I probably do not taste meat for more than a month ; and I have

not to my recollection used any other drink than cold water since my return home, and hope that such may always continue to be the case. I have heard from Judge Allen's (member of the Supreme Court of Virginia and whose wife was a relative) a few days since; Cousin Mary is well. One of her daughters is rather ill. I met the daughter at the Alum Springs during the past summer; she is a beautiful girl. Though I desire to hear from you frequently, yet I never wish to when doing so requires that your eyes should be taxed. To know that you are destroying or endangering the happiness of yourself and those around you produces more pain than the receipt of a letter can compensate for.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

In the preceding letter allusion is made by Major Jackson to his nervousness. In this connection it may be mentioned that General D. H. Hill, a brother-in-law of Jackson, and who was well acquainted with him, in writing of him, says Jackson was a very nervous man; "that the muscles of his face would twitch convulsively when a battle was about to open, and his hand would tremble so that he could not write. This only indicated weak nerves and not timidity. I think that he loved danger for its own sake, and though his nervous system was weak, he gloried in battle and never shrank from its dangers or its responsibilities."¹ Similar nervousness to that described by General Hill is common

¹"The Real Stonewall Jackson," *Century Magazine*, February, 1894. By permission,

with sportsmen in the excitement of deer and fox chasing, etc., and has no relation whatever to fear or timidity. Your common bully is not a nervous man, and yet nothing is better attested, as is well known, than to find him the shirker in battle. He was often the coward, and his personal safety was his predominating thought. An excellent article on "Stonewall" Jackson recently appeared in the *Press* over the signature of Mr. I. C. Haas, of Washington, D. C., wherein he mentions Jackson's lips quivering when giving his terse command, "Push forward, men. Push forward."

Lexington, Va., April 1, 1853.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Time as it passes brings me to the renewal of the pleasant duty of writing to my sister. Though there is nothing here of which I am aware that can be of interest to you, beyond what may be felt in an only brother, yet pleasure results from the mere act of writing to you. Our lives have been checkered in a most marked manner, and we are still, notwithstanding all the ill omens of our youth, living even beyond the usual period of human life, and I trust that before us are the brightest of our days. In taking a retrospective view of my own life, each year has opened, as I consider, with increased promise. And with my present views, the future is holding richer stores in reserve. . . . I too have crosses, and am at times deeply afflicted, but however sore may be the trials, they lose their poignancy, and instead of producing injury, I feel that I am but improved by the ordeal. But how is this accomplished? By throwing

myself upon the protection of Him whose law book is the wonderful Bible. My *dear sister*, I would not part with this book for countless universes. I feel ready to make every sacrifice to carry out the will of Him who so loved us as to give His only begotten son to die for me. How exceeding great must have been that love. The more I learn, the more dear does the precious volume appear to be to me. . . . I derive much pleasure from morning walks, in which is to be enjoyed the pure sweetness of carolling birds. The weather is delightful at present; our peach trees are beginning to bloom, and in the course of a few more weeks the forests will be clad with verdure. Judge Brockenbrough's law school has closed its session, and George Lurty has returned home, after having passed a profitable winter. If he will only make the best of his faculties, a brilliant career may be expected as his reward. He possesses talents of a high order. I have not heard from Cousin H—— for a long time; it appears that she has forgotten me. Some time since Cousin Sylvanus (White) wrote to me, and stated that he was at home, visiting his parents, but expected in a few days to leave for the West.¹ Talk to the children for me as I would were I with you. Remember me very kindly to the whole family, and to all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

¹ A cousin who resided in California, and whose letters have been quoted from herein.

XIV

HOME LIFE (1853-1854)

ABOUT this period Major Jackson's admiration for a young lady of Lexington developed into an attachment which was evidently reciprocated, for their engagement soon followed. While this fact is not disclosed in his correspondence, yet in the light of subsequent events a number of incidents are mentioned upon which to have based such a conclusion. The next letter is dated :

*Lexington, Rockbridge County, Va.,
April 15, 1853.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

Our spring is opening beautifully, though it is said to be late. I wish that I could only be with you this evening. Ah! Not this evening only, but many evenings. I am invited to a large party to-night, and among the scramble, expect to come in for my share of fun. I wish that you would send me by return mail the daguerreotype which I had taken in New York after having shaved. The one with the beard on was taken at New Orleans soon after my return from Mexico. This last one I wish you to keep safely, as I prize it highly. If you remember I gave you two others, one being taken with a stern countenance, and the other with a smile. It is the smiling one which I want; and don't fail to send it

well enveloped by the first mail. If you wish it to be returned, I will try and do so in a few months, or else a better one in its stead, as I think that your brother is a *better looking man* than he was when that was taken. It may be that you have not got the one which I had taken with the beard on ; if not, it is lost. I am anxious to get father's miniature in order to have a fac-simile of it taken ; but do not trust it to the mail. I believe that you let Cousin —— have the grum looking one which I gave you. Ungrateful girl that she is, I am going to write her in a few days such a letter as such conduct in a pretty cousin merits. I hope that you are out of bed and able to enjoy the comforts of domestic life. Kiss the children and tell them a great many things, such as their uncle would tell them were he in their company. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold, and to all the family and to all inquiring relatives and friends. Should any person be coming here, I would be glad to get my Blair's "Rhetoric."

Your brother,

THOMAS.

The expression in the preceding letter, following the statement that he was invited to a large party to-night, "and among the scramble expect to come in for my share of fun," will doubtless astonish those who knew General Jackson in later years, but not any more so than it would myself, did it not recall to memory some recollections from my early childhood, and also certain incidents that were related to me by his boyhood companions. The inquiry about the daguerreotype, coupled with the request for the early forwarding of the same, and the exuberance of spirit manifest in the letter, would indicate the en-

gement referred to. The miniature mentioned in this letter is a very beautiful portrait of General Jackson's father, on ivory, two and a half by three inches in size, mounted in a plain gold frame, and was the bridal present from his father, Jonathan Jackson, to his mother, Julia Beckwith Neale, and which at her death she bequeathed to her infant daughter Laura, afterwards my mother. Just before the latter's death, within the last few years, she expressly requested that this miniature be placed in a public museum, and which request has been complied with, Miss Grace Arnold, her granddaughter, having placed it in the Confederate Museum in Richmond, Virginia. The next letter was written from Lexington under date of June 6, 1853.

MY DEAREST AND ONLY SISTER :

Your melancholy letter has brought tears to my eyes. Yet I would never have you conceal anything from me because of the pain which it may cause me. If your health is really as you state, I would rather know it. . . . What, my dear sister, is this life, and all its joys, compared with that which is to come? How happy would I be did I but know that beyond this probationary life we should be together forever more; there with those who have gone before us, to enjoy endless happiness. . . . I shall leave here as soon as my vacation will permit, and hope to be with you by the 12th of July, if not before. I had designed making you a visit this summer, but did not know whether it would be before or after my return from the North. I have business which calls me to New York City this summer, and I was

desirous of going to some more distant places. You speak of Dr. B——'s son. I wish that it was in my power to do him a service, but being here as a professor, I ought not to abuse my trust in any way. I wrote to the doctor in reference to his son, but I believe omitted to state that in his letter to the superintendent of the Institute he should state that he was unable to educate his son himself. When he calls to see you I wish that you would mention this to him, and also tell him that Col. Samuel L. Hayes is on the new Board of Visitors for your place. I most sincerely hope that his son will get the appointment ; and if there is anything which I can do for him consistently with my duty as professor, it shall be done with a great deal of pleasure.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

Major Jackson visited my parents in accordance with his intention as expressed in the preceding letter, but his sojourn with us was for but a brief period of time as compared with previous visits, probably not extending beyond a fortnight. His departure late in July was a great disappointment to all, as his visits to us invariably were happy occasions, and as much so for the children as for the other members of the household, as we were all very fond of him ; and in his walks and visits in the neighboring vicinity he almost always, to my great pleasure, had me accompany him. My impression is that during this visit the family inferred that he was much interested in some lady, but who the particular one was he did not disclose, nor was there any intimation of anything of so serious a nature as matrimony con-

templated. The first letter to my mother after leaving our home was written from the Rockbridge Alum Springs of date :

August 3, 1853.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I arrived here yesterday in good health and expect to leave for the North this evening via Lexington. There are about five hundred visitors here at present, and the accommodations are nearly exhausted ; and in a few days it is quite probable that persons will from necessity be turned off. I hope that Stark¹ has quite recovered. Remember me very kindly to all the family, and to all other inquiring relatives and friends. . . . I am scarce of paper. Tell Miss Eliza² that she must be on the lookout for something in relation to me, and in reference to which she called my attention.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. Say to Dr. B—— that I did not hand in the list for John because of its having already been done.

As remarked in the opening sentence of the last letter, "I expect to leave for the North this evening via Lexington." This, taken in connection with the message for the maiden friend contained in the closing paragraph, was not sufficient to give intimation to the sister of what was in contemplation. His stop-over in Lexington was of short duration, long enough, however, for the ceremony uniting him in marriage to Miss Eleanor Junkin, the attractive and highly cultured daughter of the Reverend Dr. George Junkin,

¹ My brother.—T. J. A.

² A maiden friend of the family.

president of Washington College, located at Lexington. The bride was a most lovely, amiable and accomplished lady, who won the hearts of all with whom she came in contact. I distinctly remember the visit of the uncle and his wife the following summer of 1854 to the home of my parents, and how all the family were delighted and charmed with the uncle's bride. It would seem that Miss Junkin had exacted a promise from Major Jackson to disclose to no one the fact of the contemplated marriage, which she intended should be a surprise to all except her immediate family; and in his strict conception of the sanctity of his word he extended the obligation to include his sister, and the failure to inform her of the expected event proved a sore wound to her feelings, and one that was slow in the healing.

Mrs. Elizabeth Preston Allan, in writing of Major Jackson's first wife, thus describes her: "Eleanor was only a few years younger than Margaret (her sister, Mrs. Preston, the poetess) and the two sisters had been devoted and inseparable friends, dressing alike, walking and riding together, sharing the same room, the same duties, the same recreations. Eleanor was less shy than Margaret. . . . She also had more pretensions to beauty, and was of a merrier, more social disposition. . . . Her religious faith, having the simplicity of a trustful child, . . . made her one of the sunniest, happiest of beings. This brightness of temper, and a calm, clear judgment, Eleanor inherited from her lovely mother; and these gracious qualities made Margaret the more de-



MISS ELEANOR JUNKIN,
Jackson's first wife.

pendent upon her sister.”¹ A number of letters of this period are evidently missing, as the first one following his marriage was written several weeks after his return to Lexington and bears date October 19, 1853.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Some time since, when Mr. Tanner, the daguerrean, was passing through here on his way to Beverley, I availed myself of his kindness to send you and Grace and Thomas the little purchases which I made last summer, and I hope that they reached you safely. I should have sent father's miniature also, but upon reflection thought it would be better to defer doing so until a more favorable opportunity should present itself. I hope that Mr. Tanner called to see you; he is a very worthy person and one in whose integrity I have much confidence. The weather here is beautiful, and I am enjoying life. To me my wife is a great source of happiness. She has those requisites of which I used to speak to you, and sends her love to you. Tell Mrs. Hille that I have not yet learned the result of the application, but that it shall be followed up until some answer shall be obtained. In my last letter I spoke of being in Philadelphia. We remained there from Saturday until Monday, when we proceeded to West Point, where I was delighted with my early associations; the beautiful plain, the frowning ruins of Fort Putnam, the majestic river, and magnificent scenery all conspired to enhance my happiness, which had already been of a high order. The ladies² also

¹ “Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters.”

² His wife and her sister, Miss Maggie Junkin, afterwards Mrs. J. T. L. Preston, who accompanied the newly weds on their bridal trip.—T. J. A.

were much pleased with it. After remaining there until about twelve o'clock next day, we resumed our route for Niagara Falls. This of all natural curiosities is the most sublime and imposing which has ever come under my observation. We put up at the Cataract House, which is on the American side, and the next morning crossed over to Goat's Island which separates the Falls into two parts; that part on the east of the island is called the American Falls, and that on the west side the Canadian. The latter is much the larger, by reason of the greater quantity of water which passes down on this side of the island. The Canadian Falls are called the horseshoe, the toe being up-stream. When looking at this wonder of nature I desired to be left to my own uninterrupted thoughts. It lulls the mind and forbids interruption. It calls for its entire and undivided contemplation. More of this in my next. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold, the family and all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., November 30, 1853.

MY DEAR SISTER:

I hope that upon the receipt of this you will be induced to break your long silence. Do not think that because I am married that I would not be glad to receive a letter from you. I am going to the wedding of one of my old bachelor friends this evening; his name is Massie, a graduate of the Virginia Military Institute. The lady is Miss Sophonisba B. McDowell, daughter of the late Governor McDowell. At present my health is affected by a cold in the head; but to such things in my own case I attach but little importance, for with care they are broken up in a few days. My wife is in good

health, and sends her love to you and the family. Things here are working smoothly; the weather is fine, and I am much pleased with the coming prospects. Give my love to Mr. Arnold and the rest of the family. Tell Mrs. H—— that I saw the gentleman to whom I made application in her case but a few days since, and that he said he had not been able to do anything for her as yet. . . . Tell her not to be too sanguine about success for fear that she may be disappointed. In my opinion something will be done. I believe at the close of my last letter I was making some remarks upon Niagara, and had probably finished them. After leaving there we proceeded in a carriage down, and in view of, the Niagara River for a few miles to Lewiston, where we took a steamer and crossed to Lake Ontario, on our way to the St. Lawrence River; and at dawn next morning we were amid a cluster of islands, called The Thousand Islands, which present an extremely beautiful aspect. And they are probably a thousand in number, some almost covered by bare and rugged rocks and crags, and others beautifully varied with forests of northern growth. I enjoyed the scene very much. During the day we passed through the perilous rapids of that remarkable river. In passing one of them we took on board a special pilot of large and athletic dimensions. After thus passing a very pleasant day, we arrived safely at Montreal. To be remembered to all inquiring relatives and friends is the request of your only brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. You may form some idea of one of the rapids from the circumstance that though we were on a high decked steamer, yet the spray was thrown entirely over her prow so as to fall upon her deck.

T. J. J.

Lexington, Va., February 14, 1853.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your long-looked-for letter arrived at last. I hope that you may not have a return of the sore mouth, but that you may be blessed with better health than in past years. It is very singular that Mr. T—— neglected to give the things intrusted to him; possibly he changed his route after having seen me and did not pass through Beverley. I wish that I could get Tom some suitable books here. I may have an opportunity of getting some by the time that any person from this place goes to Beverley. I send you a lock of Ellie's hair; this she reluctantly parts with because of its color, which she hopes may prove more acceptable to your taste than it has ever been to hers. My message to you is that you must prize it very highly as being the token of a sister's love and from a brother's wife. Send us a lock of your hair, and also one from Grace. Tell her to give me the prettiest she has, so that I may look at it when I am so far off that I cannot see her pretty face. Tell her furthermore that I have told her aunt that Grace is very pretty, and her conduct must be as good as her face. Ellie joins me in love to you and the family.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., March 4, 1854.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your kind letter was gladly received and read. Permit me to congratulate myself upon being the uncle of another niece whom I hope will be as pretty as Grace. I hope that you will accept of my kindest congratulations and give the same to Mr. Arnold. As yet I have heard nothing of Mr. Tanner. I hope that Mrs.

Hille is improving in health. I am anxious about her claim ; no recent account has been given me in reference to it. Should nothing be reported to me before summer I shall go to Staunton in person and see about it. Until that time my occupation requires me to be at the Institute. We have recently been called to mourn the death of my mother-in-law. She, without any apparent uneasy concern, passed into that unseen world, where the weary are at rest. Her life was such as to attract around her many warm friends, and if she had any enemy in this world, it was and continues to be a secret to me. Hers was a Christian life, and hers was a Christian death. She had been afflicted with rheumatism for several months previous to the close of her life, and on Saturday preceding her death she had the return of a malady which had formerly afflicted her. On the 23d of February, about three o'clock P. M., her husband told her that her end had come ; she asked how long she could live ; he told her that probably two or three hours, and although the physicians had the same day pronounced her symptoms favorable, she appeared perfectly reconciled. She said that she was not afraid to die, and that she found Jesus precious to her soul. When asked by one of her daughters what they should do without her, she replied that the Lord would provide. She was strongly attached to her family and they to her ; yet she appeared to have no concern about what would become of herself or family, such was her complete confidence in the promises of the Bible. She felt assured that God would provide for her family, and she felt that she was going to her Saviour, with whom she expected to enjoy unending happiness. She asked us to kiss her and told her children to live near to Jesus and to be kind to one

another. Her death was no leaping into the dark. She died in the bright hope of an unending immortality of happiness. . . . Remember me very kindly to each member of the family. My wife sends her love also. Remember me to all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., April 7, 1854.

MY DEAR SISTER:

As I received your letter day before yesterday and was desirous of answering it by the return mail I could only say a few words. I am not certain whether the physician mentioned in your letter was the same whom I have heard of as the lecturer in the north or not; if he is, as I before stated, I should not much admire his character; though he might be a good doctor notwithstanding. Yet I would not like such a man for my physician if I could get a good one whose moral character would receive my approbation. If this is not the lecturer I know nothing about him. I hope that by the time you receive this that your health will have much improved. . . . I received a letter a few days since from Aunt Clementine Neale; she and Uncle Alfred¹ had been south to see Uncle Thornton² and Wirt;³ but a short time before they reached Uncle Thornton's, Wirt had gone to California. She tells me that Wirt is a very tall man and Uncle Thornton has a very high opinion of him. Uncle Minor's⁴ wife lost her last husband in New Orleans some months since, and she is

¹ Mr. Alfred Neale, a brother of his mother.

² Mr. Thornton Neale, residing in Indiana, a brother of his mother.

³ Wirt Woodson, his half-brother.

⁴ Mr. Minor Neale, a deceased brother of his mother.

consequently again thrown upon her father's protection. I have also received a letter from Uncle John White; his health has improved, and that of his family is generally good. Uncle George White's family at last accounts was well. . . . Let me hear from you soon.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., May 2, 1854.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I chanced to be at the hotel yesterday when Dr. White was passing through town and was much pleased at meeting him. It served to some extent the purpose of seeing you, as I thereby had an opportunity of seeing some one who had recently been with my sister. He told me that you had written to me, and after the post-office had opened I received the letter. The Mass¹ of which you speak I would send to you had the doctor not have procured it before seeing me; he told me that he had found it in the shop of some doctor as he was coming to Lexington. Should you wish any more at any time let me know, and I will procure it for you. I do hope that little Tom is free from that dreadful disease, the scrofula. I trust that your apprehensions may prove groundless; but it is always best to be wide awake and not permit ourselves to be taken by surprise. I hope that your health may continue to improve. The poor little babe—what can be the matter with it? I suppose that is difficult to decide in so young a child, but let us hope for the best while we continue to be prepared for the worst. Ellie's face has not entirely recovered, but I

¹ Rock strongly impregnated with alum which, placed in a vessel containing water, soon imparts that property to the water. At the period in which this letter was written it was much used by invalids.

am of the opinion that time will effect a perfect restoration. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and all the inquiring relatives and friends. Tell Thomas and the other children that I love them and that they must be good children. Ellie joins me in love to you all.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. Tell Thomas that I am sorry that he is sick and that I wish that I could do something for him.

T. J. J.

Lexington, Va., June 12, 1854.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your sorrowful letter came safe. Your loss is one which I have never been called upon to bear up under ; I can well conceive of the tender union which is thus sundered. You have my sympathy. . . . I have committed the hair to Ellie's keeping. I am not certain that we will come to Beverley this summer, though, should we do so, I will write to you beforehand. I am glad to hear that the other children are doing so well. Enclosed is the ribbon. I hope that it will please you. It was the prettiest that Ellie could find. Should there be any other articles that I can procure you, it will give me pleasure to do so. I am not certain about my election, but be the result as it may, my friends have acted nobly in my cause. I am very much pressed at this time with studies and letter writing, though a few more weeks will close our session. Tell Dr. B—— that his son is in good health. All of my wife's family are at home now, with the exception of one brother, who is in Pennsylvania. . . . One of her brothers who is a lawyer in Philadelphia has brought home his bride, having married

last Thursday. I am endeavoring to get an answer about Mrs. H——'s money, and if I do not get it soon, I shall go and see about it in person, and will have the matter settled either one way or the other. Remember me to her and to all my other friends.

Your brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

P. S. Remember me very kindly to each member of the family and my other relatives.

XV

HOME LIFE—*Continued* (1854-1855)

THE last preceding letter to his sister, one of consolation, was written by Major Jackson in reply to a letter received by him from her conveying the intelligence of the death of her youngest child, in infancy. The election mentioned in the same letter has reference to a vacancy which had occurred in the Chair of Mathematics at the University of Virginia in consequence of the death of Professor Courtenay. Major Jackson was an applicant for the vacant professorship. Whether for the reason that the position sought was more remunerative than the one he then filled, or for other reasons not disclosed, be that as it may, the efforts of his friends, though they forcefully presented and urged his election, were unsuccessful, as will appear later, and he continued to occupy his chair at the Institute. There can be little doubt that the failure to obtain this professorship at the university had quite a bearing on his subsequent career. A transfer at that date to an institution entirely the opposite of anything military, and a continuance in that position for the years intervening between that time and the commencement of the Civil War, would have so completely eliminated Major Jackson from the military arm of the state that it is not at all likely

that his name would have been as much to the fore as it was when hostilities commenced. As the situation was, he was identified with the Military Department of his state, the Virginia Military Institute. He had been ordered to Harper's Ferry and Charlestown, in command of the cadets, in the John Brown affair. This had aided in keeping him in the public mind as a military man; and wherever his name was mentioned, it caused to be revived the very creditable and flattering reputation gained by him in Mexico; so that when the Civil War came, so soon following the John Brown insurrection, he was ordered to the capital at Richmond with the cadets. And there in the excitement of the times he appeared on the scene as one of the prominent military men of the state, one who had not only a most thorough military education, but actual experience in war; and who had been in constant training and study in this, his chosen profession, ever since.

He was at once selected and assigned to an important independent command. It is hardly conceivable that such action would have been taken in the case of a quiet reticent professor at an institution of the character of the University of Virginia. Unquestionably, his services would have been placed at the disposal of his state, and have been accepted, and he without doubt would ultimately have gained distinction. But with equal certainty one may feel assured there would have been no such opportunity as was in fact presented. Major Jackson doubtless saw in the result—if not at the time, later on in life—

another manifestation of Divine Providence in his behalf. His defeat was received cheerfully and without question but that it was for his good.

In connection with the application of Major Jackson for the vacant chair of mathematics at the University of Virginia, the name of General Robert E. Lee appears for the first time as associated in any way with Jackson's career. Lee, who was ever careful and prudent in whatever he did, recommended Jackson for election to this position. This would indicate that they had known a good deal of each other, most probably in Mexico. And later as evincing a like confidence in Lee and high estimate of his ability, Jackson in a letter from Richmond of date April 23, 1861, when it became known that General Scott would remain with the United States army, wrote, "It is understood that General Lee is to be commander-in-chief; I regard him as a better officer than General Scott."¹ And then, at a still later period, "That Lee was the only man he would be willing to follow blindfold." In the above estimate of Lee Jackson was only voicing what was later public sentiment.

Lee, who has been so aptly compared to Marcus Aurelius, will, for all future time, or as long as civilization exists, be held up to the human race as a model for mankind, in ability, in grace of person,² in poise and in purity and nobility of character.

¹ "Margaret Junkin Preston, Life, etc."

² General Robert E. Lee was by far the handsomest man I ever saw. I have heard many persons express a similar opinion. I have never heard any one say that they ever saw as handsome a man.—T. J. A.

In tracing Lee's lineage one cannot but wonder what manner of man was William Randolph of Turkey Island, Virginia, the progenitor of such a trio as Chief Justice Marshall, Thomas Jefferson and Robert E. Lee.¹ What a combination and what a diversification of intellect.

To the delight of our family Major Jackson and his wife concluded to spend the summer vacation with my parents, as will appear from the following note :

Lexington, Va., July 1, 1854.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Ellie and myself hope to be with you this day week Saturday. I wish you would say to Mrs. H—— that I have failed in my efforts to procure her any assistance. I much regret this. I do not know of any person belonging to the Staunton Lodge who would have been more likely of success than Mr. Watts, the gentleman to whom I entrusted it. Excuse this hasty note as I am much pressed with business. Mr. Bledsoe, of Kentucky, was elected at the university to the chair for which I was a candidate.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. MY DEAR LAURA :

The Major is so busy with his duties at the Institute that he has commissioned me to finish this letter for him ; indeed I have scarcely seen him to-day. He wishes me to say to you that he hopes you will not exert yourself by making any preparations to receive us ; he does

¹ On the authority of the late Hon. J. Ran. Tucker, of Virginia. Afterwards confirmed by the well-known genealogist, the late Mr. Wilson Miles Carey, of Baltimore.

not want you to weary yourself or injure your health on our account. The weather is so extremely warm just now that we quite fear the ride in the stage, but we hope to find it cooler further among the mountains.

Yours affectionately,

ELLIE J. JACKSON.

The uncle and aunt arrived at our home in Beverley as indicated, and remained, as I now recall, until some time in August. A period now came in Major Jackson's life where his faith and trust in God was subjected to its strongest tension. To a man of his temperament and nature, his love was intense. To have the object of this love torn from him without warning was a death blow to him, save for his implicit childlike trust in his God. No one will ever know the weight of that blow, and the veil should not be lifted that concealed the wound. He met and bore this great affliction with his accustomed fortitude, and was nearer, as a result, could that be possible, to his Creator. It is related "That his grief was so great as to seriously alarm his friends. Yet even then he was most anxious not to sin by questioning in his heart the wisdom and rectitude of God's dealings with him. For a long time his taste for secular occupations and pleasures was lost, and his only aspirations pointed to the other world."¹ His subsequent letters to his sister and other relatives fully confirm the above statement. As illustrative of his complete resignation, the following quotation is

¹ Dabney.

given from a letter written by him to his wife's sister (later Mrs. Preston), of date February 14, 1855: "My dear sister, from my heart I thank God that though He has left me to mourn in human desolation He has taken dear Ellie to Himself. I am well assured that He left her with us to the latest moment consistent with His glory, hers, yours, and my happiness. For no good thing will He withhold from His children."¹

Several of the letters written following the return of Major Jackson and his wife to Lexington have been lost. The first of those preserved is dated:

Lexington, Va., November 14, 1854.

MY DEAR SISTER:

You must excuse this short letter and also my not having written to you at an earlier day, for my eyes have become so bad as to make me very careful with them. You wrote to me that should your health not prevent your coming to see me, that I might have expected your arrival several days since. I went to the hotel to see whether you had attempted such a journey. Though I would like to see you and appreciate your very sisterly affection, yet I would not like for you to attempt coming over such a road, with all its harassments; so do not attempt it. When my next vacation will enable me to leave (which I cannot do now without neglecting my duties) I trust that God will again permit me to see your face. My dear Ellie thought to pass over the stage route from here to Beverley was a hard undertaking for her; after she had returned home, she was pleased with her visit. She has now gone on a

¹"Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters," page 74.

glorious visit, though through a gloomy portal. Her companions are of the Glorified Host. I look forward with delight to the day when I shall join *her*.

Religion is all that I desire it to be. I am reconciled for my loss and have joy and hope of a future reunion where the wicked cease from troubling and the weary are at rest. I am much obliged to you for your kind desire to come and stay with Ellie.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., February 20, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER:

I have learned with pleasure that your health has improved and I hope that you may not for many a day to come have to take any more medicine. I have gone to both of our bookstores but in neither one could be found the books which you require. If you desire it and will let me know I will get one of our merchants, when in Philadelphia next month, to get them if they are to be had. The spelling book is here, but the others—I doubt whether they will ever be here, unless specially ordered. I have just written to Wirt;¹ I ought to have done so some time since, but have been prevented by my eyes. He is at Mount Vernon, Ind., where he recently returned from California. He saw hard times and was glad to get back even with his life, though he brought some money. My eyes are improving, but still I have to be careful with them; the spots continue to float before them. I am obliged to you for your kind suggestion not to hurt them even in writing to you. Maggie has been in Philadelphia for about three months

¹ His half-brother.

for her health.¹ Is there anything of dear Ellie's which you would like to have—her pencil, her glasses, or anything else?

Love to all, your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., March 20, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER:

I some time since received a letter from Wirt in which he stated that he was at Uncle Alfred Neale's, and that he intended going to your house as soon as the weather should settle. He requested me to answer him immediately, directing my letter to him at Beverley. I at once replied, and I suppose that the letter has reached its destination ere this. He writes a good hand and a sensible letter. He expresses his intention of going to California, or his desire to do so. This I hope he will relinquish. I am inclined to the belief that he would probably do as well by making civil engineering his profession as at anything else to which he could turn his attention under present circumstances. But of this I cannot speak definitely. He must judge of this for himself. Try and get him to stay with you if you can until I come. And get him to study arithmetic, geography and history; and for this purpose lend him Rollin's "Ancient History." If Wirt will study Latin I will give him lessons during the summer, and put him in the way of learning it, so that he can teach Thomas. I will also, if he will consent to do so, give him instruction in the different sciences of algebra, geometry, and in engineering and other branches of education, and bring

¹ Miss Margaret Junkin, later Mrs. Preston, the poetess, and sister of his late wife.

with me the necessary books. If he thinks that it will take up too much time for this kind of an education he can take enough for an engineer in the course of a few months. He can then commence the practice on some of our internal improvements. I have an idea that he might succeed well in this sphere of life. He could, whilst practising his profession, make himself a good historian, but it would be the safer plan to get a good education before he commences. I hope that for the present Wirt will conclude to teach, and then he can, as he progresses with his education, decide on his profession. I am anxious to know as soon as practicable his determination. I think that the plan of staying in Beverley and taking up a school is the proper one for him, if all things are favorable to it, so far as obtaining Mr. Arnold's approbation and a moderate school. I send you two styles of writing but I would not advise the use of but one. If you would let me know which you have selected I can send you on others when wanted. I bought four papers of seed but can only find three. If you will name the kind of seed you want I think that I can probably get them, for there is a variety here, but I am unable to select for fear that you may have them or that they will not suit your taste. Remember me very kindly to Wirt when he arrives, to Mr. A——, to all the family and to all inquiring friends and relatives.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., April 4, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your letter of the 30th ult. and Thomas's came by this day's mail. . . . Wirt told me in his letter

that he was not qualified for any occupation except farming and that he did not have the means for this. I therefore make two offers to him: one is to purchase a farm worth a thousand dollars and let him go on it and have all that he can make; the other is a system of education which I have already stated to you. Now, if you could let him know this in such a manner as to be acceptable to him, I wish you to do so. If you think that such cannot be done then let me know it. He ought not to feel hurt at any assistance which I offer to give him, because he is my brother. Should he conclude to go on the farm I want him to read during his spare time, and having a good memory he can become a good historian. Should he prefer going on a farm I think it would be well to select one in such a location as will enable him easily to dispose of his produce. He might in a few years be able to refund the money and I would not charge him any interest. I have not got a thousand dollars on hand now, but expect to have in a few months. Wirt might be looking him out a suitable farm so that when I come West we could go together and see it. I am sorry that your eyes are so much impaired, but hope that they will be better before this reaches you. I will recommend you to fill a basin full of water, and put your face under the water, and hold your eyes open in it as long as you can hold your breath. Just do this once whenever your eyes are very painful. This is the course which I am now pursuing. I do it about six times a day in cold water; and the water should be as cold as when just drawn from the well or taken from the river. My eyes are quite bad at present. Don't write, but make Thomas do it for you. I will be glad if Wirt would write to me. Tell Thomas that I shall answer his letter

in a few days. And that I am very thankful to him for it. Tell him that I am much pleased with his good spelling. I sent the primer and reader by the last mail. Give my love to all the family and to Wirt.

Your affectionate brother,
THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., June 1, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Day before yesterday I received a letter from Wirt written at Uncle Alfred's.¹ He says that his health has improved and that he plowed nearly all the preceding day. He also states that there is a school a short distance below the island and that he wants to go to school there when his health is sufficiently reëstablished. He says that he likes Mr. Arnold very much and that you treated him like a brother. I am pleased with his letter and if he continues at Uncle Alfred's I want to visit him this summer. He writes plainly and sensibly. I hope that before this you have recovered at least the usual use of your eyes, and that all things are moving on pleasantly. How is Thomas getting along with his studies? This is a rainy day here, but is rather brighter than it was early in the morning. I have received the railing for dear Ellie's grave, and this summer expect to take steps for the tombstones to be brought from Philadelphia. I intend to have them of Italian marble. The iron railing is neat and when put up it will be about three feet high. Pure and lovely companion of my happier days, I feel that she has entered upon the blissful enjoyment of which the human mind cannot have a clear conception. Ere many long years roll by I hope

¹ His Uncle Alfred Neale of near Parkersburg.

to be with her, where there will be no more separation. We loved each other on earth; and shall that love be diminished in eternity? I do not believe it, but on the contrary will be greatly enhanced. Had I one request on earth to ask in accordance with my own feelings and apart from duty, it would be that I might join her before the close of another day after this. I have many pleasures here, but I believe that there are greater in reserve beyond this life. If you want me to bring anything in July, let me know in your next. Give my love to all the family, and to all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your affectionate brother,
T. J. JACKSON.

Lexington, Va., June 11, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I wrote to Wirt a few days since and expressed my intention of visiting him this summer, if he continues at Uncle Alfred's, which appeared to be his intention when he last wrote to me, unless his health should sufficiently recover to justify him in going to school. From his daguerreotype which he sent me I think that I can observe a likeness to Warren.¹ I want you to secure the services of some one for fixing me up some shirts, and to commence about the 10th of July. I do not want anything done before I come home, as I want to have them fixed after a certain way. And I do not know whether I will want any new ones or not until I see you about the ones which I already have. I expect to leave here on the 5th of July; and if the arrangements are the same as when dear Ellie and I visited you, I shall try and be with you before the close of the week. My visit does

¹ Warren Jackson, his deceased elder brother.

not promise the pleasure of former ones. I shall see so many things which I enjoyed in participation with *Her*. I hope that you are all perfectly well. Tell Dr. B—— that I saw his son very recently and that he looks quite well. Remember me very kindly to all the family, and to all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your affectionate brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

The following letter represents Major Jackson engaged in a pursuit requiring wisdom of a different order from that of his usual routine duty, and one from which the ordinary man would be supposed to shrink with a feeling akin to fear and trembling. Whether he carried out his avowed intentions in the matter of the purchase of a lady's bonnet is not known. One can only form a conjecture from the course ordinarily pursued by him in other matters, viz., that he usually did whatever he said he was going to do. He seems to have had no fear as to the proposed purchase giving satisfaction, his only uneasiness being that it might get broken in transportation. The letter bears date :

Lexington, Va., June 18, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter postmarked 10th instant came a few days ago. . . . Julia¹ last week purchased two collars for you, but she could not find a suitable belt. I afterwards went in search of one, but with a similar result. There are plenty of them but not such as pleases me, so I intend postponing the purchase until I reach

¹ His deceased wife's sister, afterwards Mrs. Fishburn.

Staunton. I could get a bonnet, but I am afraid that it would get broken. I shall think it over when I am in Staunton. The shawl I have had no opportunity as yet of sending for. I shall try and bring you some slips or cuttings from dear Ellie's flowers. It will give me much pleasure to teach Thomas while I am with you. . . . I am much obliged for your kindness in reference to shirts, but don't let anything be touched until I see you. Wirt has not written since your last. Remember me very kindly to Mrs. Hille and Miss Eliza and to other inquiring friends. Give my love to all the family. I hope that Aunt's and Cousin John's health have improved.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

XVI

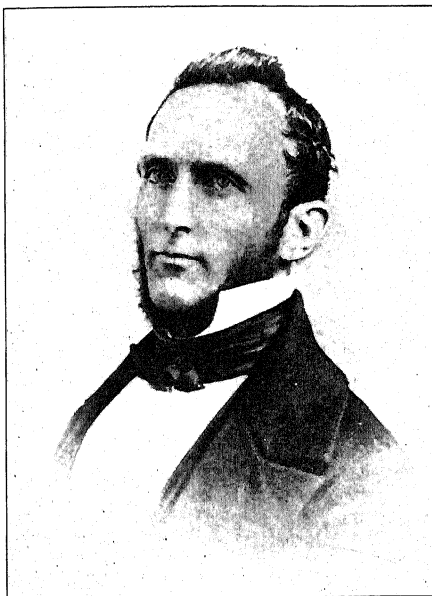
LEXINGTON, VA. (1855-1856)

AT the close of the session at the Military Institute for the academic year, 1855, Major Jackson came by stage-coach through the mountains to our home. I well recall his visit at this time. He was more serious in manner than I had ever known him. I was too young to fully realize that this was a result of his late bereavement. He spent the greater part of his vacation with our family. Going from Beverley, he made a short visit in the neighborhood of his old home in Lewis County, among his boyhood friends and relatives; he visited also at Clarksburg and, later, with his relatives at Parkersburg, and in that vicinity. The following letter is written from the home of his Uncle Alfred Neale, on Neale's Island in the Ohio River, located some four miles above Parkersburg, and is dated :

Uncle Alfred's, August 10, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER :

The object of this note is to state that I was prevented from going on the Hall-place. But I learn that there are six hundred, thirty-seven and a half acres to be sold on the 20th of this month. This land is composed of the Hall-place, the Schoolcraft place, and the Thorpe



JACKSON THE PROFESSOR—AT THE VIRGINIA MILITARY INSTITUTE.

“I would not part with the Bible for countless universes.” Page 198.

place, none of which I wish to purchase. It is estimated that it will go at from three to five thousand dollars, and is by all regarded as valuable property. As my eyes continue weak you must excuse this brief letter. Wirt sends his love and thanks for the articles of clothing, and says that he wants you to write to him; that he has only received one short note from you, though he has written several letters. Uncle's family are in usual health.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

From Parkersburg Major Jackson travelled down the Ohio River by steamboat to Point Pleasant, thence up the Kanawha River, including in his journey the last home of his mother in Fayette County, recalling no doubt to his mind the former sad visit of himself and sister in their childhood to their mother's dying bed. From this point he continued by stage-coach to Lexington. The first letter addressed to his sister after his return to his duties at the Institute is dated :

Lexington, Va., September 3, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER :

As my eyes are still troubling me, you must excuse this brief note. I left Wirt on Thursday, of week before last, with the understanding that he would start for Missouri on the following Monday. There he designed going to farming on some land which I expect to purchase. He is to have some more schooling after he gets located, and I hope that he will do well. He was troubled about the promise which he made you of paying you a visit. I advised him to go at once and select some

place where he would like to live, and that I would write to you. It was important that he should as soon as practicable get fixed in some pursuit. His mind was unsettled and flying from thing to thing. And it appears that the course he was prevailed on to take is the best for him. He had learned but very little at school previous to my going to the river. But with the start I gave him in grammar I hope that he will become a good grammarian. I want him to study spelling, writing and grammar. I hope that you will write to me soon approving his course and excusing him from his promise. I felt well satisfied that you would do so when I counselled him to at once locate himself. Give my love to all the family.

Your affectionate brother.

Major Jackson was very much concerned about his younger half-brother Wirt. The latter upon the death of their mother, which occurred at or near the time of his birth, was received into the home of his mother's brother, Mr. Alfred Neale, of whom there has been previous mention, and made his home with him until manhood. In his early childhood he got possession of some buckeyes or horse-chestnuts, considered quite poisonous, and of which there were a great quantity growing in a wild state on the island where his uncle resided. The child ate of these before the family were aware of what he was doing. He was badly poisoned and his life was despaired of; and although he recovered, the effects therefrom were apparent for many years. Whether his constitution was permanently impaired thereby or not is

unknown. Major Jackson was anxious to aid him in every way possible. This half-brother later settled in southern Indiana, and became a successful business man and respected citizen, but died at a premature age.

In the introduction mention is made that as far back as the years 1855-1856 Major Jackson in his letters to his sister forecasted the war between the states. The reader will find in the next several letters the expressions to which the allusion was made.

Lexington, Va., October 6, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your letter of the 27th of September came safely and am obliged to you for your advice relative to Wirt. I agree with you in regard to the course to be pursued. . . . My arrangement as to the purchase of land is this: That he should go out and make a selection of such a farm as would fulfill certain conditions; and previous to the purchase, the transaction must be approved by Uncle Alfred Neale, in the event of his being in Missouri at the time; if not, then Cousin William Neale¹ must approve of it. I have received a letter from Wirt dated September 19th in which he states that he had reached William Neale's, but in going up the Mississippi River the boat was snagged, and he left his berth to go forward, leaving his purse under his pillow, and when he returned it was gone. He says that the country is very healthy, but that improved land is worth from twenty-five to thirty dollars per acre. Cousin William has advised him to go elsewhere, and he is going to look

¹ A resident of the state of Missouri.

at the lands of Johnson County. He expressed himself pleased with the country, and I hope that he may do well. *I do not want him to go into a free state if it can be avoided, for he would probably become an abolitionist; and then in the event of trouble between North and South he would stand on one side, and we on the opposite.*¹ Tell Mr. Arnold that next year I want to go West and make investments in land and would be glad could he go along and make some purchases for himself if he desires to make such. . . . Cousin William Neale has advised Wirt to do as you recommended, namely, to raise stock; and I suppose that he will do so. When Wirt shall have purchased land, then I expect to furnish him some money to enable him to work it. . . . I agree with him that land in a free state rises most rapidly. But I have a scheme on hand which I think you will approve of and which I will give in my next.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., October, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter to Wirt appears to have had a good influence on him, such as to relinquish his idea of returning to Indiana; yet he has gone beyond what I authorized him to do by purchasing a farm at eight dollars per acre. I restricted him to seven at most. But, notwithstanding, if Cousin William Neale will approve of the bargain, I have determined to advance eleven hundred dollars. I well know that there is a risk, but it appears to me that I ought to run this risk for him. He made the purchase without consulting Cousin William, and it

¹ Italics supplied.

may be that he has been cheated. I have written to Uncle Alfred to forward between seven and eight hundred dollars if he thinks it should be done, but with the condition that the contract is to be approved by Cousin William and the deed to be made out in my name. Wirt says that he has paid ninety-five dollars on the purchase money by selling his horse to the person from whom he purchased. Mr. Thomas¹ left for home yesterday, and I left at the house where he was staying a testament for him to carry to Mrs. Hille. It may possibly be that it was not delivered to him. Please let me know whether Mrs. H—— gets it. He was not in when I left the book, and he told me afterwards that he had not received it; but I requested him to ask for it before leaving. Tell Mr. Arnold that I want to get about two thousand acres of land warrant; and ask him whether he could purchase me any if I were to forward the money, and at about what price does he think it can be procured? I do not want to make any purchases until after Christmas, as the general impression, I believe, is that the price will be lower about that time; but I would like to know what it is worth now. Tell him that my intention is to let the land lie after purchasing it for a number of years without selling it; and that as the lands in Kansas² are less culled over than those in the free states, I will for the same amount of money get better land; and that Kansas will almost certainly be a free state, and this will give the advantage of a free state in selling should I years hence wish to dispose of them. Ask him what he thinks of these views. Tell him that I have been told that there is considerable good land in Illinois still unappropriated,

¹ Rev. Enoch Thomas, who resided at Beverley.

² Kansas, at the time of the writing of this letter, was a territory.

and if so, I want to lay warrants on some of it, as it must ultimately command a high price. I hope Mr. Campbell¹ will come on and that you will be able to keep him. Aunt Clem told me in a recent letter that soon after my leaving she was laid up from exhausted strength, but that she intends answering your letter. She was very kind to me. At their last commencement Charley and Julia took prizes.² William Junkin, my youngest brother-in-law, is to be married to-morrow to Miss Anna Anderson, a lovely and pretty girl. Our Synod was a delightful assembly.

Your affectionate brother.

P. S. I have received dear Ellie's tombstone to-day. Enclosed is a draft of the headstone; it has a full blown rose and a rosebud on the top.

Lexington, Va., November 3, 1855.

I wish that you would not omit to let me know Mr. Arnold's views in your next, and whether he thinks that he will go with me, and the prospects of buying say one thousand acres of land warrant, and the price per acre. I wrote to James Dix³ a few days since, and in reference to his putting up stones at brother Warren's grave; and I wish that you would drop him a line as soon as convenient, giving the days of his birth and death. If you have my letter upon the subject of his death you may find one of the dates from it. I got Aunt Katy Williams⁴ to go with me to father's and our sister's graves, and made arrangements with her for having the graves fixed up, so far as renewing the earth over them; and I hope that before a great while we shall be able to erect

¹ A gentleman engaged to teach a private school in Beverley.

² Children of Alfred Neale.

³ A relative.

⁴ An elderly lady, first cousin of his father.

stones. The cadets have been absent at Petersburg and Richmond but are expected home to-day.

T. J. J.

Lexington, Va., December 6, 1855.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have been rather anxiously looking for a letter from you for quite a while, and am somewhat apprehensive that something, as ill health, has prevented your thus appropriating a few minutes to my gratification. . . . William Junkin¹ returned home with his wife about a week since. I received a letter from Aunt Clementine a few days ago about Wirt, and I have written him another letter stating that if Cousin William Neale would approve of the contract that I would forward the money to Cousin William for the purchase, with the understanding that it should not exceed eleven hundred dollars. I see that land warrants in New York have fallen about twelve cents on the acre. Mr. Arnold must not inconvenience himself in order to get warrants for me, because I can get as many as I want by sending to the North; but I thought they might be purchased cheaper in Beverley, if there were any for sale. And it may be that Mr. Arnold wants to purchase for himself all that he can. The indications in New York are that they will fall rapidly. Have you any teacher as yet? Love to all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., January 18, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I regret not having answered your letter earlier, but our examination and other causes have prevented it,

¹ A brother of Major Jackson's late wife.

and now I must give but a short answer. I answered Thomas's letter, and tell him that I want him to write to me often, and to tell me of all my errors in spelling.¹

January 21st. My eyes so troubled me on Saturday as to cause me to postpone the finishing of my letter until to-day. I have not heard from Wirt directly for a number of weeks; but a few days ago I received a letter which was written by him to Aunt Clem; he was, he stated, going to school. I wrote to him a few weeks since. I have recently heard of Cousin Hardin's death. He died in New Orleans, where he had gone for his health. I am much pleased with the idea of your getting up an academy, and hope that you may be successful in your noble effort. I trust that you will succeed in giving each of the children a good education. Tell Thomas that I want to see him well acquainted with the Latin grammar when I make my next visit. I believe that I stated in my last letter that Mr. Arnold need not buy me any land warrant unless he had already done so. I think that in New York it will be bought for less than a dollar before long. Tell Cousin John² that I am glad to hear of his brightening hopes, and that I trust that before long I shall be able to write to him, and that I would be glad to hear from him if he should at any time feel able. Remember me very kindly to him and to all inquiring relatives and friends, and tell the children that I hope that they will be very good, and get as pretty presents every year as they have just gotten. Much love to all the family.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

¹ See letter to T. J. A., p. 300.

² A relative, who died soon afterwards.

The mention of the academy made by Major Jackson in the preceding letter has reference to an effort on the part of the citizens of the town of Beverley to establish an academy there, and which was so far successful that a substantial brick building was erected and just completed at the commencement of the Civil War. There was never an opportunity, however, to use it for the purpose for which it was intended. It was taken possession of and occupied by Federal soldiers shortly after their arrival at Beverley in the summer of 1861, and was subsequently destroyed by them, and was never rebuilt. The next letter was written from Lexington, under date of

February 18, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I expect that you have been looking for a letter for quite a while as I am several mails behind my time. And acting upon the principle that late is better than never, I have concluded to appropriate a portion of this afternoon to a little talk with you. My paper, you see, is variegated with colors, but obviously not much beautified by such acquisition. This varied appearance has resulted, not from color, but from the absence of color, produced by spilling some nitric acid on it; and it has given me about a quire of the same stamp. Tell Thomas he must never give up his Latin grammar, nor his English either; that if he perseveres that he may expect to find both of great use after a while. Tell him that his uncle had to study hard for years at more difficult things than Latin grammar, and that after he learns it, it will all be very easy. Tell him also that I want a letter from him when he finds time to write. But he must make himself perfect mas-

ter of his spelling book and then he may expect to write correct letters ; but without knowing these two books, he can hardly ever expect to write correctly, because all correct writing must have the words spelled correctly, and written grammatically. How is Cousin John White? I have not yet written to him, but if your next letter brings the news of his life being prolonged, I think that I will try and write very soon after. My time is much taken up during the day, and I am afraid to write at night. But my eyes are improving. I have no recent news of Wirt, at least for several weeks, and I do not know where he is. The last I heard from him was through a letter written to Aunt Clem.¹ Cousin Hardin appointed Uncle Alfred his administrator. If Cousin John is still living, give him my warm remembrances and hopes that the visions of the future may grow brighter until faith is lost in reality of those joys which passeth all understanding. Much love to all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

The next letter is dated :

Lexington, Va., March 31, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter has come safely and I am glad to learn that you are in such an exuberant flow of spirits, and hope that such may long continue. I received and answered your other letter in regard to the tombstones at brother Warren's grave. But I usually answer letters from recollection, thus saving my eyes from re-reading. I forgot to answer that particular inquiry, but remem-

¹ Mrs. Alfred Neale.

bered it afterwards, and should have answered it ere this. I wish to put stones to his grave, and also to father's and sister's, and also to mother's if I knew certainly the spot. But it appears to me that it would be best to put all up at the same time during the coming year. But if you would prefer having Warren's put up now, write to James Dix and get him to do so, and pay him. And ask Dr. B—— if it will not suit him to let you have my part of the expense, and let me pay over to Colonel Smith here the same amount for him. It will save him the risk of losing it in the event of his sending his money by mail. But should it not be convenient for the doctor to do so, and you can spare the money until I shall have an opportunity of getting a check, I will forward it to you; and should there be other expenses I will share them with you. The congregation here to which I belong have objects, to which they subscribe, of much more importance to them than your academy can be; I am well satisfied that your application would meet with little or no favor here, and I would advise that no effort should be made. We have six annual contributions, and then certain others, which are first recommended by our session; and I am certain that the session would consider other objects as more demanding their recommendation than the academy. You need not be afraid of the opposing party doing anything here; if they were to do so, it would give me an opportunity which I would embrace, if at home, of urging your claims. Thomas need not repeat his English verb when he is conjugating his Latin verb, but ask him sometimes what his Latin verb is in English. I have heard from Wirt and have written to him like what I wrote to you. Much love to all of you.

THOMAS.

P. S. You say nothing of my letter to Cousin John having been received. I am very glad to hear that he died so happily. Give my kindest sympathy to Cousin Mary and the family, and to aunt and uncle. Tell Thomas that I expect to write to him soon. My eyes are troubling me much.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Referring to the desire expressed by Major Jackson in the above letter to place stones at his mother's grave, if he knew certainly the spot, it may be here stated that he made a special trip to Fayette County, (West) Virginia, where his mother's remains had been interred at the time of her decease, for the purpose of identifying and locating her grave, as he and his sister were anxious to erect a tombstone on the spot in her memory. After some time spent there in the effort to find it, with the assistance of such persons of the vicinity as had been present at her burial, they were unable to identify her grave, and greatly to his disappointment. But he was entirely satisfied that in the erection of a stone it would be a matter of mere conjecture as to the location for which it would be intended; and for this reason he reluctantly abandoned the idea of doing so. Some years subsequent to the Civil War a gentleman, an ex-Confederate soldier, who had great veneration for General Jackson's name, in his admiration and generosity erected a stone to commemorate the memory of the mother of General Jackson at a spot pointed out to him as the location of her grave. While the members of

General Jackson's family and his other relatives fully appreciated the motive that prompted this act, yet in view of the unsuccessful effort of General Jackson himself to identify the particular spot, a number of years prior to the visit of this gentleman, and when one would naturally suppose the location of the grave could be more readily identified than at a much later period, they have very little idea that the exact location will ever be known; and for this reason they have pursued the same course as did General Jackson. Had the gentleman referred to communicated to General Jackson's family his intentions, before acting in the matter, he would have been informed of the above facts.

In explanation of the difficulty in transmitting money from one place to another, appearing in the above letter, and elsewhere in Major Jackson's correspondence, it may be mentioned that at that period, and for some years later, there were no banks in small towns and country districts; and in the transference of money from one locality to another there was a good deal of risk of losing it. Also, the residents of such sections were unfamiliar with banking methods. It was not an uncommon practice to cut bills of large denomination into two equal parts and transmit one part by one mail and the other part by a subsequent mail; the person receiving the several installments would paste the parts together and so use them. A prominent citizen of Beverley, who for many years acted as a quasi-banker for the entire county and without remuneration, was accus-

tomed to send his money to the bank at Clarksburg, some sixty miles distant, by persons travelling through to that point, not infrequently by strangers whom he had never known or seen before. He so informed me; he said he could judge of a man's honesty pretty well by his appearance, and that he had never lost any money by this method.

Lexington, Va., May 12, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Thanks for your letter, and excuse me for not having answered it sooner. I have been unsuccessful in procuring seed, as our seed seller of last year did not bring them on this year. But the apothecary chanced to have a few on hand from which I have selected two papers; the assortment is very poor and small. I wish you would drop a note to Mr. Criss or to Cousin Elizabeth and ascertain whether he could not see to putting up the stones at the graves of father and sister, and ask what they will come to, including the cost of putting them up. And if you can get it attended to, I will advance the money at any time for the purpose; but before closing the terms let me know, because if they are not as good as I can get elsewhere, I had better have it done. But it appears to me that all the probabilities are in favor of getting it done cheaper through Mr. Criss, at Clarksburg, than I could get it done abroad. I have not been able to ascertain the cost of railing for you, but intend writing to Philadelphia about it. Maggie¹ left for Philadelphia last Saturday. I received a letter from Wirt in which he expresses his probable intention of

¹ Major Jackson's sister-in-law, Mrs. Preston.

going West again, and I understand from his language that he means California, as he speaks of going over the plains, or some such phraseology. I have been trying to find his letter, but have not succeeded at this time. I fear that I will not get to Beverley this summer as I am very anxious to go direct to Washington City, and begin my work of finding out and locating land. And as I may have much to do in the West in endeavoring to find out the best land, all my time may be absorbed; but I hope not, and trust that I shall get through in time to visit you. Let me hear from you soon. I hope that Thomas has received my letter.

Your much attached brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. We have had a great revival of religion here.

June 6, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter came safely, and I begin my reply now, though I shall not mail it until Monday.¹ As yet I have not heard from Philadelphia in regard to the railing, but I may do so by the time of forwarding this. In regard to the tombstones, I wish as soon as you receive an answer in reference to them, and shall have determined on the price, and the time that they are to be put up, you would let me know, because in the event of their being put up before September, I must make my arrangements before starting West. And I wish to know the amount, as I desire to employ all my spare funds in the purchase of lands. Dr. B—— will pay you fifteen

¹ As is well known Major Jackson never mailed letters on the Sabbath day, and always when possible sufficiently early in the week to reach their destination before that day.

dollars for me in return for money which he wrote to me to give his son this coming summer, but it will not be due until some time in July, as he proposed returning it to me in Beverley, supposing that I would visit there this vacation. If the man comes to Beverley, as I suppose he does, from his furnishing stones for Cousin John's grave, had I not better send the money to you and get you to pay him, getting Cousin Criss to see that he does the work properly. I expect Colonel Augustus Smith here this month from Clarksburg, and if you can't arrange the matter otherwise, I may be able to arrange it through him. In reference to Wirt, I am interested in his welfare, and had he followed my advice I feel that he would most certainly have been benefited by it. I wrote to him not long since in answer to a letter from him. Ask Mr. Arnold if there is anything I can do for him this summer in the way of locating land warrants, or otherwise. Tell him that my present purpose is to go to Washington from here, and after finding out all that I can there in reference to Western lands, to pass into Illinois, Iowa, Missouri and probably Arkansas. *And say to him that I design following out his idea of locating some land in a Northern state, but that I am a little afraid to put much there for fear that in the event of a dissolution of the Union that the property of Southerners may be confiscated.*¹ I want to locate about three thousand acres, maybe a little more; and if I can please myself, will probably put about one-half of it in a Northern state. I would be thankful for suggestions from Mr. Arnold if he has any to make. As yet I have not purchased land warrants. They have fallen recently to less than a dollar per acre in New York. This is Monday afternoon and no news as yet in regard

¹ Italics not in original letter.

to the railing. By my next letter you may expect to hear about the cost. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and all the family. I hope that Thomas is doing well in his Latin and English grammars.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

XVII

EUROPE (1856)

ALL thought of the Western trip and the investment in lands, either in free or slaveholding states, seems to have been completely and suddenly abandoned by Major Jackson. The full explanation of such action will appear in his letters later. Greatly to the surprise of his sister's family, the next letter she received from her brother reads as follows :

New York City, July 9, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I sail in the steamship *Asia* for Europe at twelve o'clock to-day for Liverpool. The reasons for doing so I will give in my next. I gave John B—— an order on the Lexington bank for thirty dollars and requested that the money should be returned to you. You can apply it towards father's and sister's graves.

With much love to all,

Your affectionate brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

Ship "Asia" at sea, July 18, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

You have doubtless been surprised at my sudden leaving for Europe instead of going West to purchase or

locate land. You may remember that in 1851 I had a nine months' leave of absence for the purpose of visiting Europe, but that Colonel Smith induced me to relinquish the idea for the time, holding out to me an opportunity at some future time, and that I accordingly did postpone my contemplated trip. This year, as the time for going West drew near, I became more and more discouraged in regard to investing money in such distant lands, and a gentleman with whom I conversed, and who has had much experience, told me that he did not think it a safe and profitable investment. Another friend told me that he had come very near losing a part of his in consequence of his being so far off as to interfere with his giving sufficient attention to it. And I have rather concluded to keep my money invested in stocks of different kinds, and thus get my dividends regularly, and trust to the blessing of Providence for gradually increasing my worldly goods. Thus circumstanced, I, in a few days before starting, concluded that an opportunity was now offered of going to Europe which would probably never again be presented to me. What should I do with the two months before me was a question which I did not know how to answer satisfactorily. You are a very kind and affectionate sister, yet even with you I would be reminded of the loss of that happiness which I once enjoyed with dear *Ellie*. So I have to some extent torn myself away from that state of mind which I feared, should my summer have been passed at home, or in the United States. I hope that you will be able to get up the tombstones by the aid of the money I have sent you. . . . When I return I will let you have whatever may be wanting, should you not be able to get along with what you have. . . . I wish you would write me a letter to New York

City during the first week of October. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold and to all the family. Kindest regards to all inquiring relatives and friends.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

The earliest intelligence of Major Jackson after his arrival in Europe is the following letter written from Naples :

Naples, September 9, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

You must excuse my long silence, as I have been much pressed for time, and hasten to drop you a line. Since landing at Liverpool I have been at Glasgow, Stirling Castle and Edinburgh in Scotland; York, London and other places in England; Antwerp, Brussels, Waterloo and other places in Belgium. Since then I have passed through Aix La Chapelle, Bonn, Frankfort on the Main, having ascended the Rhine. From Frankfort I proceeded to Heidelberg and thence on to Baden Baden in Germany, Strasburg, Basle, Lakes Lucerne, Brienz and Thum, Berne, Freiburg and the city of Geneva in Switzerland, and so on to the great Glacier called Mer de Glace, that is, sea of ice. I continued in Switzerland for about a week and crossed the Alps by the Simplon Pass, as it is called, through which Napoleon entered Italy. The scenery of Switzerland is very grand. After entering Italy I visited the cities of Milan, Venice, Mantua, Modena, Florence, Pisa, Leghorn, and finally to this place. With Venice, Florence and Naples I have been very much gratified. I was at the volcano of Vesuvius on last Friday and went about half-way down

one of the active craters. The scene was truly grand.
This evening I leave for Rome. Much love.

Your attached brother,
THOMAS.

Whether there were any other letters written from Europe does not appear, as the next in the collection was mailed from Lexington after he had resumed his duties at the Institute. It is dated:

October 25, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER:

I forwarded to you after returning home a few lines, and with pleasure I now appropriate a little while to say where I have been during my absence. As to telling what I saw, a volume of several hundred pages would be required. But should I ever be permitted to see you, I trust that I will be able to pass several hours in narrating my travels. I was unable to come through Beverley and see you. I was several days later in returning home than I had designed. After reaching Liverpool I passed down to the old town of Chester, and then out to the residence of the Marquis of Westminster; his house is called Eaton Hall. Afterwards I returned to Liverpool and proceeded north into Scotland, passing through Glasgow, Stirling and Edinburgh. After leaving Edinburgh I returned to England, visiting York, the residence of Oliver Cromwell, the University of Cambridge and London. From London I took a steamer to the continent, landing at Antwerp, and passing on to Brussels, Waterloo (the several places named in a former letter are omitted), Naples, Rome, Genoa, Marseilles, Lyons, Paris, Calais, London, Liverpool, New York, home. . . . I could talk to you with much

pleasure about very many things of great interest. Tell Thomas that I intend answering his letter in a few days. I am very much gratified that you are putting up the gravestones. Should you want any more funds let me know. I found two letters from Wirt awaiting me at home. I shall send him a check for ——— dollars if I can get one on New York for that amount. Much love to all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., December 6, 1856.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I am glad to learn that you have secured a teacher, and that she has been with you for some time, and I hope that she is such as you desire she should be. We have just been having in our village a series of lectures by Mr. O. P. Baldwin of Richmond. They were four in number, viz. : "Better Times Coming," "Humbugs," "Spirit Rappings," and "Yankees and Southerners." As you may judge from their titles, they were more amusing than instructive. I heard the first three. You would probably like to hear a little of my whereabouts during the past summer, and I purpose giving you a kind of journal, should you so desire. But should you get tired at any time, just let me know. I believe I said something to you in my last,¹ but as I failed to take a note of my stopping point, I shall again commence at Liverpool. Leaving Liverpool the same day of my landing I proceeded to the city of Chester, which is about eighteen miles from Liverpool, and on entering the hotel I was met by a lady instead of a landlord, as I had been accustomed to at home, and she wished to know whether

¹ Evidently refers to a letter now lost.

I would have a room, etc. After having secured my quarters, I proceeded to the cathedral, which is a large edifice, formerly occupied by the Roman Catholics. At the door I was met by a man who, upon learning where I was from, inquired after the Fairfax family, stating that the representative of that house lived in America, and that he was entitled to the succession. It was about the hour of evening service. They have two services there per day, and this was about four o'clock P. M. He turned me over to the sexton, who showed me to a seat upon the condition that I should not leave it until after service was over. After service he showed me through the building, which was quite interesting. Among other things were the seats for the friars or monks, which were so constructed that, should they become drowsy and forgetful of their duty, their seats suddenly dropped them on the floor and recalled their wandering thoughts. I walked around the wall and saw the tower on which King Charles the First stood and saw the defeat of his army at Rowton Moor. Much love to all the family, and kind regards to all inquiring friends.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

In reading the preceding letter, one cannot but conjecture as to what were Major Jackson's thoughts upon having exhibited to his inspection the ingenious arrangement of seats for the monks, nor what personal application of its use may possibly have occurred to him at the time, or afforded food for thought subsequently, when it is recalled that several of his biographers and others have asserted that he almost invariably dozed off to sleep during church service.

Whether such was the fact I am unable to say, although I sat in the same pew with him at church regularly for almost a year, as I also did upon other occasions. I can state that to all appearances he would go to sleep ; but afterwards he always seemed to know something of every topic that was introduced in the sermon, and so much more about it than I did that I would not like to vouch for his slumbers.

Lexington, Va., February 26, 1857.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter of the 8th came safely. I regret that you should have been the loser of so many teeth. I don't like the idea of your being toothless ; but, as you say, another set can be furnished by the dentist. I received a letter from Aunt Clem requesting me to lend Uncle Alfred two or four hundred dollars for Wirt to buy stock to drive to California. I did not have the money, and even if I had, should not have lent it ; for one reason among others is that I do not approve of Wirt going to California. I have recently heard from him and he asks me to lend him —— dollars, but says nothing about going to California. I think that next month when our bank gets in operation that I will send him a small amount. I am unable to say whether I will first visit Beverley or North Carolina.¹ Our winter has been very severe, but for near a fortnight we have had beautiful weather. The aspen is in bloom, and the weeping willow is beginning to look green. I am still at Dr. Junkin's. Tell Miss Eliza² that

¹ It was about this period that there was quite an attraction for Major Jackson in the latter state of which more in the next letter.

² A maiden lady and friend of the family.

if I should bring her a beau that she must not tell on me, lest the old bachelors about Beverley should mob me for tramping on their toes. I infer from your letter that when I dropped my narrative I was at the Cathedral of Chester. After leaving Chester I passed to a beautiful estate of an English nobleman, the Marquis of Westminster; he lives about three miles from the city; but after driving about half a mile I came to a beautiful gateway, somewhat resembling the front of a fine building; here the porter who had charge of it admitted me, and I drove through a park containing about fifteen hundred deer, the race-course on which he tries his horses; etc., the fences being of iron, and the ground containing a variety of luxuriant trees. After passing on thus for near two and a half miles, I came to a magnificent palace covered with pinnacles. Here, after ringing the bell, a servant, of quite a gentlemanly appearance, came to the door and admitted me by my giving him my ticket of admission, which I had procured before leaving Chester. The interior of the building is magnificent. One of the rooms is copied from the celebrated Alhambra of Granada in Spain, which was built by the Moors. . . . Much love to all.

Your brother,

THOMAS.

XVIII

HOME LIFE (1857-1859)

THE next letter is without date, but was written probably the latter part of May, 1857. It discloses a trait in General Jackson's character, the possession of which has seldom been attributed to him except by his intimate friends; for in the minds of many the impression has been formed that a sense of humor was foreign to his whole nature. This letter further discloses the approaching time of a very important and happy event in Major Jackson's career, and which certainly became a large factor towards his happiness for the remainder of his life. The bright, sunny nature and cheerful disposition of his future bride was just what one of his temperament needed. The kind Providence that he always appealed to for guidance surely directed him in this most important decision.

Lexington, Va.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I don't know whether you have yet returned from your visit to aunt's, but I will write to you now, as I have the time, and might not have so much leisure in a few days hence. And I will begin by stating that I have an invitation for you; and what do you think it is? and who from? For it is not often that I am authorized to send you invitations, and especially pressing ones. And

I suppose you begin to think, or may think, Well, what does he mean? Why doesn't he tell me at once and be done with it? Well, you see I have finished the first page of my letter, . . . so that if I don't tell you soon, you will hardly get it at all from this sheet. Well, now, having cultivated your patience a little, as all women are said to have curiosity, I will tell you that Miss Mary Anna Morrison, a friend of mine, in the western part of North Carolina, and in the southern part of the state, is engaged to be married to an acquaintance of yours living in this village, and she has requested me to urge you to attend her wedding in July next. To use her own words, she says, "I hope your sister will come. You must urge her to do so. I should be very glad if she could come." The wedding is not to be large. I told her that I would give the invitation, and having done so, feel that I am free from all further responsibility in the matter. I told her that I didn't think that you would be able to accept it, and if you can't, just let me know in your next, and transfer the invitation to your humble servant, and he will not decline; for he is very anxious to go, as he is much interested in the ceremony and the occasion, and the young lady is a very special friend of mine. I hope that you have had a very pleasant trip to the river.¹ I deposited in our bank a few days since ——— dollars, and transferred the evidence of deposit to Wirt, and forwarded it to him, stating that he might expect more next July. Our weather is beautiful at present, and I suppose that spring will rapidly advance now. Give much love to all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

¹ Ohio River. His sister had been visiting her relatives and friends at Parkersburg and vicinity.

Immediately following the close of the session at the Military Institute for the year 1857, Major Jackson came directly to our home for a brief visit. Just how long he was with us upon this occasion I do not remember, but it could not have extended much beyond a week, as his marriage to Miss Mary Anna Morrison took place at the home of her father, Dr. R. H. Morrison, in Mecklenburg County, N. C., on the 16th of July. This visit of Major Jackson's is distinctly recalled by the truly beautiful presents that he had brought from Italy the preceding autumn for my sister and myself, this being the first opportunity that presented for their delivery. His intention, as is evident from his correspondence, was to make a visit to us at Beverley with his bride to be, followed by a tour of some of the Northern states, but he was prevented from so doing for the reason assigned in the next letter. The letter conveying intelligence of his marriage has been lost, as probably several others immediately following. The first of those preserved was written after his return to Lexington and is dated :

Rockbridge Alum Springs, August 11, 1857.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Since my last we have visited Niagara, Saratoga and intermediate places. As stated in my Richmond letter, I had expected to proceed from that point to your house ; but an enlargement of one of the glands of Anna's neck induced me to consult a physician, and my concern was so great as to induce me to take her to Philadelphia, where she consulted Dr. Jackson of the



MRS. MARY ANNA (MORRISON) JACKSON.

From a photograph taken about 1880.

university, and he was unable to decide as to the true character of the case. But whilst there I met with Dr. Graham of Lexington, in whom I have great confidence, and he advised me to bring her here, after making a short tour. We reached here last Wednesday evening, and the enlargement has apparently diminished considerably since that time. We expect to remain here till near the close of my vacation, and then to return to Lexington. I regret that we have been unable to visit you this summer; but I felt that under the circumstances it was my duty to make Anna's health the first object of concern. In coming from Staunton here I fell in with Cousin Floride¹ and her little boy, on their way to the Healing Springs. Let me hear from you soon, and if you can write before the 25th of this month, direct to this place; otherwise, direct to Lexington. Give love to all. Anna joins me in love to you.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., December 19, 1857.

MY DEAR SISTER :

You have probably been expecting a letter from me for some days. Owing to an inflammation of the tube leading to the ear, and also inflammation of the throat (chronic), and very painful neuralgia, I have been constrained to give up my correspondence for a while. I never remember having suffered so much as within the last three weeks; and now I am compelled to use a vial of chloroform liniment per day externally, and am also using internally a preparation of ammonia. The hearing of my right ear is impaired, but I trust not permanently.

¹ Mrs. Floride Duncan of Clarksburg.

I have continued to attend to my recitations, notwithstanding my sufferings. In a few days I hope to be free from pain. The eye medicine helped me for a while, I think, but I can't say that I have been permanently benefited, and I would advise you not to try the medicine. Anna is quite robust again. She joins me in love to you all. I wrote to Wirt advising him to go to some active occupation, and to read standard books, and thus endeavor to apply his knowledge of grammar, and become acquainted with the construction of the language; use is of great importance. . . . Let me hear from you soon.

Your affectionate brother,
THOMAS.

In the following letter Major Jackson gives his views as to the plan of salvation.

Lexington, Va., February 8, 1838.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your very welcome letter of last week reached me this morning, and I am rejoiced to learn that you are so much concerned about "*the one thing needful*." I have borne in mind that our sainted mother's prayers would not be forgotten by our heavenly Father. Though dead, her prayers, I trusted, would be *precious* in the sight of the *Lord*. The Saviour says in Mark, sixteenth chapter, sixteenth verse: "He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved." But you may ask, What is it to believe? To explain this I will quote from an able theologian, and a devoted servant of God. To believe, in the sense in which the word is used here, is *feeling* and *acting* as if there were a God, a heaven, a hell; as if we were sinners

and must die; as if we deserved eternal death, and were in danger of it. And in view of all, casting our eternal interests on the mercy of God, in Christ Jesus. To do all this is to be a Christian. You speak of having done all that you know in order to be accepted. This is too apt to be our error. *We must not depend on making ourselves holy*, but just come to the Father and ask, for the sake of Jesus, and rely entirely on the merits of Christ for our prayer being answered. The Father loves the Son, and for His sake pardons those who plead the Son's merits. We should never think of presenting any merits of our own, for we are all sinners. Do not trouble yourself too much about not having repented enough for your sins, for your letter shows that you have much concern about the subject. But let me advise you simply to do as God enabled me to do: that is, to resolve to spend the remaining part of life in His service, to obey the teachings of the Bible until death, and to rely entirely on the mercy of God for being saved. And though the future looked dark, it has become very bright. Never despair; even old Christians sometimes have dark moments. Never omit to pray at regular times. For years your salvation has been my daily prayer and shall continue so. Write to me often, and tell me all your trials, that I may be able as an instrument in the hands of God of doing something for your eternal welfare. I have nearly, if not entirely, lost the use of one ear,¹ and my throat has to be cauterized about twice a week, but it is improving. Were it not for my throat Anna and myself would like very much to pay you a visit this winter. My throat and

¹ Fortunately he was later greatly relieved of this deafness. Though for the remainder of his life he was partially deaf, so much so that he was unable to locate the direction of sound.—T. J. A.

the sale of a neighbor's property next week are the two obstacles. Anna is anxious to go next week. She joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., March 8, 1858.

MY DEAR SISTER:

I thank our heavenly Father for having given you that peace which passeth all understanding, and which the world can neither give nor take away. The world may wrong us and deceive us, but it never can take from us that joy resulting from an assurance of God's love. You may expect dark hours, but never for one moment permit yourself to despond. The followers of Christ are expressly told in the Bible that in this life they shall have tribulation; but our Saviour has also told us to be of good cheer, for He has overcome the world; which teaches us that if we but persevere in the ways of well-doing that we also shall overcome the world. I am glad that you called in Mr. Thomas.¹ Tell him that I am much obliged to him for sending the prescription. You say that you don't understand my letter. My throat, to which I alluded, has been inflamed, and I have lost the use of one ear, or nearly so, in consequence of the inflammation extending along the tube leading to the ear; and the other ear is also affected. But we know that all things work together for good. This is my great consolation. Anna has been desirous of visiting you this winter, and I even went so far as to try to engage a carriage and horses; but having failed, and receiving a letter from a friend in North Carolina, requesting me to join him in an enterprise, and having a few days' leisure,

¹ Rev. Enoch Thomas, Presbyterian clergyman residing at Beverley.

I concluded to go South, the doctor having told me that I could do so. But I fear that I caught a cold returning home which has made my throat worse. Nearly all the way I was in the cars with a comfortable fire. Pray for Wirt. I wrote to him some time since. Anna joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. Cadet Chenoweth desires to be remembered to you.

Lexington, Va., March 1, 1858.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I am very much pressed with business, but I must drop you a line to say that yesterday God blessed us with a charming little daughter, and we have named her after Mrs. Morrison, Mary Graham. My eyes have been troubling me a great deal lately. I regret that you have had so much suffering. It appears to have resembled my attack. I am now using glycerine which is the essence of oil. I take it through the nostrils for the purpose of curing the inflammation at the entrance of the nasal tubes into the mouth, and I find it of great service. God has blessed its use to me. I tried caustic or nitrate of silver, but with much less effect. I hope that you will soon be well. I ascertained to-day that I can get a copy of "Silver-wood" in town, so you may expect one when Mr. Chenoweth goes home, if not before. Anna and the little one are both doing very well, for which we are very thankful to our heavenly Father. I received a letter from Wirt a few days since; his health, I think, is just tolerable from what he says. I have been wanting to write to Thomas for some time, and hope to do so before long. May the blessings of our heavenly Father rest

upon you richly is the prayer of your affectionate brother. Anna joins me in love to you and the children. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold.

Your brother,
THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., May 22, 1858.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your welcome letter came safely, but finds our little daughter very ill of jaundice; and she may at any hour take her place among the redeemed in Paradise. Anna is doing well. My intention has been, and still is, to visit you this summer, but I learned a lesson from last summer—not to make a promise; for no one can tell what a day may bring forth. But I trust that if our little daughter lives that God will bless us all in a visit to see you, and all the family. It seems like a long time since I was at your house. The children, I suppose, have grown a great deal. Give my thanks to my darling little niece¹ for her letter, and tell her I expect to answer it in a few days. Give much love to all the children from myself and Anna. She joins me in love to you. I received a letter from Wirt this morning, stating that he is well, but that he lost his horse by his straying off, and that he wants me to forward him one hundred and five dollars New York draft, which I want to try and do, though it will cost a premium here.

Your affectionate brother,
THOMAS.

The next letter is one written to his niece, Anna Grace Arnold, then some ten years of age, to whom

¹ My sister, Anna Grace Arnold.—T. J. A.

he was always greatly attached, and whose subsequent pure Christian life and character, and her unwavering faith in her Saviour, would have more than won his unbounded admiration had he lived to have known it. In this letter he conveys the first news of the death of his own little daughter.

Lexington, Va., June 7, 1858.

MY DEAR LITTLE NIECE :

Your very interesting letter reached me a short time before your sweet little cousin and my little daughter was called from this world of sin to enjoy the heavenly happiness of Paradise. She died of jaundice on the 25th of May. Whilst your Aunt Anna and myself feel our loss, yet we know that God has taken her away in love. Jesus says, "Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of heaven." Did you ever think, my dear Grace, that the most persons who have died and gone to heaven are little children?¹ Your aunt is doing very well; she is out visiting. We hope to go and see you all this summer, but my health is so delicate that I am disposed to go North first. I think this will give us more time to stay with you. Should we go to see you first I may have to hasten on North without staying more than two or three days. I wish you would write to me at once and let me know which you would rather I should do. I hope that you have enjoyed your school and your vacation both a great deal. Remember your aunt and uncle to your father,

¹ What consolation and comfort the niece derived from reading this letter many years later when she was bereft of her own two little children, her all, within a few days of each other.—T. J. A.

mother, Thomas and Stark, and accept much love for yourself.

Your affectionate uncle,
THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., June 19, 1858.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your letter and that of Grace reached me this morning, and for a while I thought that I might be able to visit you previous to going North; but after more maturely considering my case, and all the circumstances, I am disposed to think that I had better go North first. My disease is not understood by my physicians here, and I have nearly, if not entirely, lost my hearing in my right ear, and my left ear is diseased, and my nose is also internally affected. The first thing it appears to me should be to seek relief if it is to be had. Write to me to New York City, and tell Tom and Grace that they must write to me this summer, also, as soon as I let you all know where my letters will reach me after leaving New York City. Tell Grace that I am much obliged to her for her letter, and that she may expect me to answer it before a great while. As to Thomas's examination, I think that Mr. Thomas¹ can judge better of his qualifications than myself, though I wish that I could be with you all before his teacher leaves. I hope to be with you in the latter part of August. I forwarded a check to Wirt for one hundred and five dollars on New York. I had to pay a premium of one per cent. for it, and urged him to refund the money on the first of September according to promise. If I had known that he had found his horse, I don't know that I should have sent him so much. I have need of all the money that I can com-

¹ Rev. Enoch Thomas.

mand. When you write to him, tell him that he had better sell one of his horses. Anna joins me in much love to you and the children. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Thomas and his wife, and to all inquiring friends.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

New York City, July 21, 1858.

MY DEAR NIECE:

I have been desiring to write to you for some time, but have been prevented. I am now under the care of a physician by the name of Carnochan, who is one of the professors in a medical college here. I hope that I am improving, but do not know how long I will remain here—probably ten days longer. Afterwards I expect to start on my visit to you, but will delay some time on the way, I expect, in Philadelphia, Baltimore, the Glades,¹ etc. Your Aunt Anna is quite well, and we are seeing many pretty things here. Give my love and your aunt's to all the family, and write to me as soon as you receive this. Direct your letter to New York City.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

New York City, August 18, 1858.

MY DEAR SISTER:

I have been detained here longer than I expected, and this morning my physician told me that my right tonsil is inflamed, and the inflammation extends some distance down towards the lungs. He thinks that by paring off part of the tonsil, which is to be done to-morrow,

¹ In the vicinity of the more recent summer resorts of Deer Park and Oakland, Maryland.

that I will get well of the pulmonary trouble. He told me some time ago that I would get well, but that some change of treatment might be required. I have long thought that something more was troubling my throat than physicians had discovered. As I feel it necessary to remain a short time after the surgical operation, you must not look for me for ten or twelve days. I have attended to getting Harper's book-list, so that I can answer Thomas's questions; and if I cannot get Longworth's wine, which I have been trying to do, I will get you Park's best Ohio wine. I was at his store yesterday. Anna joins me in love to you and the children. May God bless you spiritually and temporally is the prayer of your brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., October 23, 1858.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter of the 19th inst. was received this morning. Thomas reached here, as you expected, on last Saturday, and has been a very good boy.¹ And we are all much pleased with him. He commenced going to school on Tuesday last to Mr. McFarland, and is studying the English and Latin languages. His teacher wishes him to study arithmetic also; but I am unwilling for him to undertake any more at present, until I see what success will attend his present studies, and also what kind of health he will have. I don't wish him to go over anything without his understanding it thoroughly; and hence he must not have too much to study. I regard it as a great error to require a child to study what his mind is not capable of appreciating. The tend-

¹The allusion is to the writer, then a lad of thirteen years, who evidently was on his good behavior.

ency is to diminish his fondness for study; to give him a vague way of thinking, since he is not accustomed to see the precise point; and by overtasking the mind, his health both of body and mind are endangered. . . . I will attend to the directions of your letter, and I am glad to see that your views with regard to Thomas's education and my views on the same subject are so alike. I don't think that Thomas will get very homesick. I regret that I have not got some occupation for him; and also regret not having some good companion for him to always associate with. I wrote to you about pocket money for him, but, as I stated, that probably he had reserved enough for that purpose; I find such to be the case, as he since gave me ——— dollars to keep for him. . . . My greatest concern about him is his eating; when he first came he would use neither milk nor coffee. Since then he drinks a little coffee, but I am afraid of his doing so, as he has not been accustomed, he says, to its use. I don't wish him to change his home habits in any respect, unless there is necessity for so doing. I wish you would let me know how he lived at home. He gets his lessons well. Anna joins me in love to yourself and the children.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., February 19, 1859.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your letter reached me this morning. . . . Next week Thomas will commence studying geography again, as I have found that whilst he knows a good deal about geography, yet there are some parts of it with which he is not well acquainted, and every person should be familiar with it, and the earlier with him the better. As with his present knowledge his geographical lesson

will not take much time, I may be able to give him some lessons in Spanish. I had him in my room this morning reciting in Latin and hearing his catechism. I don't know much about Latin myself. I shall hear him more frequently on his English grammar. I hope that you and Mr. Arnold will both soon be well. With the blessing of Providence we will visit you in July, though this need not prevent you from visiting us before then. And I hope you will do so, as something may prevent our visiting you in July. Thomas says his health is much better than it was at home, but it has not been so good, in my opinion, since he received his box of eatables. I never knew him until since that time to complain of deranged stomach or of its effects. Yesterday, this being Monday the 21st, he had his lesson very well for the Sabbath school. My dear sister, do not permit yourself to be over-anxious about Thomas. Remember that God withholds no good thing from them who love Him. Commit all things into His gracious hands. May He bless you with every needful blessing is the prayer of

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., March 14, 1859.

MY DEAR SISTER :

. . . I hope that you will not permit yourself to be anxious about him (Thomas). He is making some progress in Spanish, though I have not required him to give it much attention. I hope that by the end of the session he will be able to continue it without any assistance from a teacher. Come and see us if you can, for as Anna is not well I am afraid for her to travel over the road from here to Beverley. I expect to visit you

in the summer if God in His providence will permit it.
Anna joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., May 9, 1859.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I omitted in my last to answer your question as to when I design visiting Beverley. I hope to do so in July, but you must not give yourself any trouble about the vegetables you spoke of, as I am, through the blessing of our heavenly Father, enabled now to live on most anything. Don't get brown bread for me, as I have ceased to use it. But when I drop in I will just eat such things as are convenient. I heard from Anna Saturday; she sends love to you. Thomas was very anxious to go with his teacher and a number of the scholars to the Peaks of Otter, but I felt it was too great a responsibility for me to take to let him go. Some of the boys might have guns with them, and some accident might occur to him. *Accordingly he remains at home, and I hope that he will make considerable progress in Spanish.*¹ In consequence of the irritation of my throat I have not been hearing him much in the last few days. But he is far enough advanced now to study considerably by himself. I hope to have a fine supply of vegetables for you when you come. You must try and bring some other members of the family with you. Give my love to the children. Thomas is well.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

¹ Italicized by the writer who was far from being pleased at having to remain and study Spanish while his schoolmates were off on a holiday trip.—T. J. A.

XIX

HOME LIFE—*Continued* (1859-1860)

AS indicated in the last preceding letter, Major Jackson's sister visited him at his home in Lexington in June of that year, accompanied by her two younger children, and remained until after the commencement exercises of the Virginia Military Institute, when we returned home by stage through the mountains. Major Jackson's friends in that charming town extended a most cordial welcome to his sister; and the many attentions of which she and her children were the recipients were ever afterwards a pleasant memory; and their kindness was no doubt very gratifying to Major Jackson. Years subsequent to this visit, it may be here mentioned, the same cordial welcome and kindness have been experienced by the writer and his family in this most hospitable of Virginia towns. In the period referred to in the last several preceding letters, I was a member of Major Jackson's household with the exception of the first few weeks, when we lodged and boarded at the same house, and for the entire time was under his daily supervision. While there I was with him more or less daily, frequently reciting my lessons to him, often accompanying him in his walks, almost always with him for Saturday and other holiday out-

ings covering several miles, going with him to his farm and elsewhere. Always at the same table, I invariably went with him to church. He would take me with him to an occasional entertainment or lecture. During our walks Major Jackson's conversation was interesting and instructive, the instruction being imparted in an entertaining and attractive manner. His attitude might be aptly compared to that of a careful and painstaking tutor.

I recall upon one occasion, when I had been at Major Jackson's home but a few weeks, I was informed by him one evening that if I would arise early the following morning I might accompany him to the Institute; that there was to be a salute fired at sunrise—my recollection is of nineteen guns—to commemorate the anniversary of the founding of that institution. I had never heard the report of artillery fire, and very naturally was inquisitive regarding it. I remember he corrected me in the use of the word "cannon," suggesting "ordnance" as a better word. As I was eager to be present, I was ready at the time designated and accompanied him. We arrived at the Institute probably five or ten minutes before the battery of four guns were hauled on the parade ground by the cadets; horses were not used. After the salute was fired, and the guns had been removed, I observed Major Jackson examining the ground carefully in front of the position from which one of the guns had been fired. In explanation he asked me whether I thought that particular gun had made a louder report than the others; that it had seemed so to him,

but that he was somewhat deaf in his right ear and might be mistaken ; that he was examining to see whether there were any pieces of rags scattered on the ground—that sometimes rags were stuffed in to make a louder report. On this occasion he gave me a good deal of information about artillery.

As to the character of the entertainments referred to, the following instance may be cited. He informed me that I might go with him to an entertainment one night, explaining in advance that he thought it would be interesting—that it was to be a representation of ancient Jewish priests in costume, blowing horns—ram's horns. The performance was quite attractive to me. In returning home he remarked that he thought it rather poor, that he was disappointed in it.

Perfect system and regularity prevailed in Major Jackson's household. The moment the beat of the drum at the Institute was heard, distant some three-fourths of a mile from his residence, to summon the cadets to fall into line to march to the mess hall, the family repaired to the dining-room, taking their seats at the table. I do not remember an occasion when the meal was not in readiness. Following the blessing, the ordinary conversation of the family was indulged in while the repast was in progress. Major Jackson took part in the usual conversation in the home, as much so as any one ordinarily would. When there was company, which was not infrequent, he talked freely, and was entertaining in conversation, and seemed perfectly at ease. I do not recall

a single circumstance during my residence there, or in fact at any other time, that could be termed eccentric upon his part. I do not think he was so. The next letter to his sister was written just after Major Jackson's return from the Sulphur Springs and is dated :

Lexington, Va., August 27, 1859.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I returned last Tuesday evening from the White Sulphur Springs, and under the blessing of Providence my health has much improved, and if I only had a week more before the commencing of the session, I would visit you ; but I would barely have had time to ride to your house and back, which would not have answered our purpose, as my desire is to make a visit. But I hope that in November I will be with you. *The first visit that I pay is to be to you.* I feel that a disordered liver had probably much to do with my affected throat, and if I can only keep the secretions right I hope that my throat will soon be well. Anna's health, I fear, has not improved much, though she gained some flesh during her stay at the baths. Major Preston has just returned and given me an account of you all. I am much gratified that Mr. Arnold invited him to stay with you. I regret that Mr. Arnold's arm continues to trouble him. I trust that you will succeed in securing a competent teacher for the children. Tell them that their aunt and I were wishing this week that we could see them. Sulphur water appears to suit my disease better than any other remedy which I have met with, and yesterday evening Anna and myself took a ride to one of these springs about eight miles from town. I never knew of its existence until within a few

weeks. The water is very pleasant, yet very weak, and I fear not of much benefit. I send you by the same mail with this letter one of our catalogues. Anna joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,
THOMAS.

Home, September 13, 1859.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Your last reached me safely, and Anna delivered the articles to the servants according to your request. I regret to learn that your health continues so infirm. I am, with yourself, glad that you visited us last summer with the children, and hope that you may be spared to visit us again, and I hope that at your next visit we may be able to make you more comfortable than you were at your last. Anna's health has become such as to render it necessary to send her to a physician. And she left last Friday for Hampden Sidney, to be under the care of Dr. Watkins. Give my love to Mr. Arnold and to all the children.

Your affectionate brother,
THOMAS.

P. S. I fear that I will not get to see you in November. But my first visit, as I said before, is to you. May our kind heavenly Father bless you richly is my constant repeated prayer.

Home, October 1, 1859.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Last week I mailed a letter to Mr. Arnold requesting him to visit me, and among other inducements told him that we were to have a county agricultural fair,

but didn't mention the day, as I had not yet ascertained it; but it is to be on the 23d of the month. Urge Mr. Arnold to come, if you think that he can do so safely. And during his stay I will try and interest him in our schools and country, and see if he can be induced to locate here. I found that the cadets designed being absent so short a time that I concluded that I had better postpone my visit to you until next summer. I feel that we are now very greatly blessed with a good teacher for boys; he is the very man, I think, whom Thomas would do well under. We have a number of good schools for Grace and Stark. I heard from Anna on Saturday. She hoped to be at Hampden Sidney to-day. She feels much improved, and is bringing Laura, her youngest sister, home with her. I hope that they will soon be here. Let me hear from you soon. And tell me what Mr. Arnold says. Love to all, and trust God unreservedly in all things is my sincere prayer.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. You had better get Thomas to write to the editor of *The Little Pilgrim*, and tell him to send his paper to Beverley.

Lexington, Va., December 12, 1859.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter stating that you are teaching the children yourself has given me concern, and I write this letter for the purpose of saying that you must never hesitate a single moment about sending the children to me. I stated in my letter to you the conditions upon which I was ready to do for them what I could, because I felt that it would prevent any disappointment to you and

Mr. Arnold in the event of their coming. And I feel that I can make them comfortable, and enable them to acquire a good education, and to move in that sphere of life where I desire to see them move. Without a good education they must ever fall short of that position in life which they ought to occupy. And their early education consisting of spelling and reading is of great importance. If either is defective, the education must necessarily be defective. But if insuperable objections lie in the way of getting a good teacher, or of sending them abroad, don't give yourself anxiety, but trust in our most kind and merciful Father, who withholds no good thing from His children. I am very thankful to see you bear up under your trials with such Christian fortitude, and as long as we lean on His Almighty arm, all shall be well. I reached home on last Friday night about three o'clock in the morning. Anna is an invalid still, but I trust that better health is in store for her. My throat has been troubling me again in consequence of a cold contracted during my military excursion.¹ I am thankful to you for engaging the pigs, but I don't know when I will be able to bring them home. You must give my love to Aunt and Uncle White. Remember me very kindly to Mr. Arnold. Anna joins me in love to the children. Should you see any of Mr. Chenoweth's² friends, say to them that I saw him to-day, and that he is well.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

¹ The reference is to the return of Major Jackson from Charlestown, Virginia, whither he had been ordered by the governor of the state, with the corps of cadets, to be present as an escort at the execution of John Brown, December 2, 1859.

² A sub-professor at the Institute.

Lexington, Va., January 28, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your last very welcome letter came safe to hand, and I am glad that you have succeeded in procuring a teacher. And I hope that the children will learn well under his instruction. I am glad to hear of Mr. Arnold's improved health, and trust that it may continue to improve. Through the blessing of our heavenly Father we have been spared from the smallpox thus far, and I hope that we may entirely escape it. There are few cases now amongst the whites. The servants have taken it, though it has not spread much. As soon as a servant takes the disease he is carried to the hospital. And they appear to be greatly afraid of the disease in consequence of their being sent there. . . . I hope that Anna's health is improving, but very little throws her back again. I wrote to Aunt Clem¹ a few days since. On my return from Harper's Ferry I came through Richmond and saw Wm. L. J—— and his wife, Jonathan B—— and his wife, and Wm. E. A——, Ben. B——, John S. H——, and other friends. I wish you would write to me what are the given names of Wm. L. J——'s wife and B——'s wife and what relationship there is between them and us, and give me a letter full of such things, as I am asked from time to time what is the relationship between me and such and such persons. I think Mr. Arnold knows a good deal about the subject. For example, I think he knows who were grandfather's brothers. I remember having a talk with him once on the subject, and I found he appeared better acquainted with such things than myself. Who was Dr. Edward Jackson? Anna joins me in love to you

¹ Mrs. Alfred Neale.

all. I hope that your health is better than when you last wrote.

Your affectionate brother,
THOMAS.

A want of knowledge on the part of Major Jackson as to the degree of relationship existing between himself and his kindred as expressed in the preceding letter is easily explained when it is remembered that he left his uncle's home in boyhood to enter the Military Academy at West Point. And while he personally knew many of his very numerous relatives and their relationship, yet there were many others less closely related, and some of them residing at a distance from his home, whom he would meet with occasionally, and at that early age he would not be likely to give much thought or attention to the degree of relationship. Subsequent to the time of his admission to the academy at West Point he had made but few and hurried visits to his former home. The next letter in the collection is dated :

Lexington, Va., April 16, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have been desiring to write to you for some time, but have been prevented from doing so. I am sorry to learn that your eyes trouble you so much. I wish you would try the simple remedy of washing them with cold water, lifting the water to the face in both hands, and washing the face until a little water gets into the eyes and they commence smarting. Do this at night just before going to bed, and again immediately after getting up. I hope that you are improving, and that

Mr. Arnold is likewise. Anna is suffering from a very bad cold. She has been confined to her bed for nearly a week, but is up this afternoon. I don't know how Mr. Arnold thinks Wm. L. Jackson¹ would do for a judge, but if he would like to see him elected over E—— and can do anything for him, I hope that he will do so. I thought that probably there might be some person or persons living near his father's old place beyond Weston with whom he might have influence. If such is not the case, do not say anything to him about it. And probably you had better say nothing anyway to him upon the subject.² From what I have heard, William will very probably be elected. I hope that the children are all doing well. Anna joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

The following letter is in regard to his niece's education.

April 23, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I intended writing to you to-day, but as Anna has done so, I will only say a few words, and these with respect to Grace. I have not mentioned the matter to Major P—— and I don't think it necessary to consult him upon the subject; but if you still desire me to do so, let me know in your next letter and I will give you his opinion. My mind is clearly in favor of making

¹ A relative of whom mention has been made before.

² My father did not reside in the circuit referred to and consequently could not vote there. Jackson was a Democrat and was on that ticket. My father was a staunch Whig; hence, I suppose, the caution manifested as to approaching him on the subject.—T. J. A.

Grace familiar with the English grammar as soon as practicable; let her commence it at once. Let her not only study the principles of the language, but require her to parse a great deal, so as to make her familiar with the application of the principles. Let all her studies be English until she shall become a finished English scholar. I don't attach much importance to Latin for females. It is of value to every educated person, but mostly to professional men. I am glad that Mr. Arnold is retaining Mr. McC——.¹ You may expect another line from me in a week or so.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Home, May 1, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER;

Tell Grace that I have received her letter, and that I am glad to see her spelling so good. I will write to her in a few days and will send her the patterns desired. Whenever you desire furniture from New York let me know, and I can order it from either of two establishments. One of them makes first-class furniture, but I think that his prices are too high for you. I purchased nothing of him but half a dozen parlor chairs. The rest of my furniture, omitting piano and a few other articles, was furnished by another house, and I was very well pleased with the articles; but when I was last in New York I purchased a few more articles of the same house, but am not pleased with them so well. So I would advise you to order but a few articles at first, in the event of your intending to purchase much. I am writing in great haste, holding the paper in one hand and

¹ Mr. R. A. McCutcheon employed by my father as instructor for the children,

writing with the other. Anna joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Home, June 4, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have not heard from you for so long a time that I am fearful that you are sick ; and if so, you must make the children write to me. I hope though that your health is good. Anna is unusually unwell, but I trust that she will soon commence improving again. My eyes have improved greatly, through the blessing of Him who withholds no good thing from me ; but in some respects my health is more impaired than it has been for some years. If I don't improve I hope to leave for a hydropathic establishment soon after our commencement in July. And my plan is to send a servant with the carriage to meet me at the depot nearest Beverley. What is the name of the depot ? I want the servant to get to your house a day or two in advance of the time, so that he will be certain to meet me. Anna and I will then return by Beverley in the carriage, and send the servant home by the railroad. All this plan may be frustrated, but I am resolved to pay you the first visit which I make. So you may be satisfied that if I don't visit you that my health is such as to render medical treatment necessary. I send some early Silesia lettuce seed, which I hope you will sow at once, and after it gets a few leaves on each plant, set the plants in rows, so that the plants shall be eight inches apart ; and water them occasionally, so as to keep the ground damp. I never was fond of lettuce until I tried this. I regard it as the largest, tenderest and finest flavored that I have ever tasted. If

you wish any more seed, let me know and I will send it. I am greatly gratified at the election of Wm. L. Jackson. . . . My disease gives me pain every day. I experience unusual pain whilst riding in a carriage. Anna joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., June 30, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your letter, enclosing the check, came safely, and relieved my mind from apprehensions of your being seriously ill. We have closed our examinations, and I hope that on Thursday next I will be able to leave. I have some concern about getting from here to Goshen (the nearest railroad station) but I trust that I will not experience much pain, as I design going in my carriage. I don't feel so well to-day as usual, but I have been exercising probably too much, as I am at the Institute for the third time. I think that my general health is better than it has been for a year or two at this season of the year; but much exercise appears to bring on increased trouble and pain. If I do not improve greatly between this and the time that I reach New York, I will pass directly through and leave your purchases until my return. Write to me at Brattleboro, Vermont, as I design going to a hydropathic establishment there. If I should not stop as I go through New York, I will write to two different establishments there and find out on what terms they will furnish the furniture; so that on my return it will only be necessary to make the purchases. In your next letter tell me to whom I must direct your purchases. I expect that it will be cheaper to send them by water to Baltimore, and from Baltimore by railroad. If

so, it would be necessary to send them to the care of some one in Baltimore, as well as to the care of some one at Webster Station on the railroad. Anna doesn't know of my writing this letter, as I am at the Institute, or she might have some special message. Her health is much better than usual, and I trust that through the blessing of God she will be restored this summer. The weather is oppressively hot. Much love to all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

XX

HOME LIFE—*Continued* (1860–1861)

AS stated in the last letter in the preceding chapter, as early as Major Jackson was able to leave Lexington, he, accompanied by his wife, visited the New England States, with the view of undergoing treatment at a water cure, in the efficacy of which he, as is evident, had a great deal of confidence. His next letter was written from one of these resorts.

*Round Hill Water Cure,
Northampton, Mass., July 21, 1860.*

MY DEAR SISTER :

I have been desiring to write to you for some time, but on last Friday week I was very ill with a bilious attack attended with high fever ; but as I was with a skillful water cure physician, he soon, through the blessing of a kind Providence, arrested the fever, and on Saturday I was again outdoors, and am now better than before the attack. I might have written to you last week had I not have been anticipating a change from Brattleboro to this place, and I feared that your letter might not reach me in the event of having it directed to that place should I leave there. To-day I came here, and am much pleased with things so far. I think that Anna's health as well as my own has improved. The special object of writing to you at this time is to request you to furnish me with another list of the articles you

wish me to get for you. I would not trouble you with making out another list had I not, as it appears, put those you sent me in such a special safe place of keeping that when I was about leaving home I could not find them myself. I don't think that I will get you anything at auction. I bought our sofa there and it has turned out a great cheat. I wrote to you by Mr. Chenowith, and I think requested you to tell me to whom I should send the purchases in Baltimore, and also at Grafton. Please let me know soon after receiving this, and direct your letter to Round Hill Water Cure, Northampton, Massachusetts. I wish you were here with me; it is one of the most beautiful places I have ever seen. Anna joins me in love to you all.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

P. S. I am on the west side of the Connecticut River, so you can find me on the map.

*Round Hill, Northampton, Mass.,
August 4, 1860.*

MY DEAREST SISTER:

Your welcome letter of July 22d reached us at this place. I am glad that our sweet cousins, for such are the M——'s, are about paying you a visit, and I very much desire to meet them; but such gratification cannot be indulged in at this time, as our physician says that Anna will have to remain here until about the 1st of October if she wishes to be cured. He says that he can thoroughly cure her. He says that he could cure me of all my symptoms of disease in from four to six months. And as I am improving, I wish that I could remain here until relieved of all my troubles, or so long as I continue

to improve. He says that I have a slight distortion of the spine, and that it has given rise to some of my uneasy symptoms. There are several ladies here who could not walk when they commenced treatment, and are now walking as if perfectly well. Anna and myself much regret that we must again be denied the pleasure of visiting you, as we had hoped to do. But I know that at the right time our heavenly Father will permit us to see you. I am anxiously looking forward to some opportunity during the coming session. I wrote in my last for you to give me a list of furniture, etc. I will do the best I can for you in New York. I will not have an opportunity of stopping in Philadelphia, as my time is so precious. If you prefer the Philadelphia bedstead, I will write to the same person who made ours and get you one. I send a list of some of our purchases. They were much lower than could have been bought in Lexington. Anna joins me in love to you all. I wish I could stop in Philadelphia, as I might get something for you, and also attend to an important matter for ourselves. I much regret that you hadn't your furniture at this time. You must give my love to H—— and the others when they visit you. May you have every needful blessing, temporal and spiritual, is my habitual prayer.

Your very affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

The next letter was written just after his return to Lexington.

Home, September 3, 1860.

MY DEAREST SISTER :

I have reached home safely, with my health much improved. My physician said that I ought to have re-

mained a month longer, and I tried to do so, but did not succeed.¹ And I am satisfied with the sweet assurance that all things work together for my good. Anna's health was much improved, yet it was necessary for her to remain longer. I stopped in New York and went to Bruner and Moore's, and also to Madden's. They are persons from whom I hoped to purchase your furniture. And at Madden's I have been able to get you better bargains than Anna and I got of him. . . . All the articles are mahogany, and I like them.

Home, September 24, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your very welcome letter reached me on Saturday, and I forwarded a draft this morning in a letter to Mr. Madden requesting him to purchase the carpet and stair rods and to forward all by the first packet to J. Arnold, Beverley, Randolph County, Virginia, to the care of R. L. Heavener and John Gephart, Jr., No. 320 Baltimore St., Baltimore, Maryland. I specified green as the color for the lounge, as you did not mention the color in your letter. I much prefer it to ours, as I think it is more serviceable, whereas ours has proved to be a great cheat; having been bought at a New York auction, I might have expected it to have turned out badly. As you request a Bible instead of the oil cloth, I conform very willingly to your wishes. In order to get a new draft from a bank, the person to whom the bank gave the draft has to inform the bank that the draft has been lost or mislaid, as the case may be, and satisfy the banking officer that he is acting honestly in the matter. If our bank were to give me a draft and I should lose it, all I

¹ Presumably had made an effort to have his leave of absence extended.

would have to do would be to go to the cashier of the bank and tell him that the draft was lost, and request him to give me another, which he would do; and he would then write to the bank that was to pay the draft, and tell it not to pay the first draft, if he thought it necessary. So if the draft sent me was given to Colonel Goff, ask him to write to the bank and request another draft, stating that the first has been lost or mislaid. If the cashier of the bank does not know Colonel Goff, the colonel had better inclose his letter to some friend in whom the bank has confidence and let this friend present it to the bank, so that the bank may be satisfied that all is right. I regret to give you so much trouble. When your friend reaches Lexington, if she will send me her card, or let me know of her being in town, it will give me pleasure to gain her access to all of our schools which she may desire to visit. I will try and make her stay here agreeable. It may be that Anna will be at home by that time, which will contribute to her enjoyment. The house is very lonesome without Anna; it hardly appears like home. Anna is well, so the doctor says, and she will come home so soon as her strength and health have been a little more tested and confirmed. May our heavenly Father greatly bless you and all your family, prays your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

The following letter of introduction is self-explanatory. The bearer was the son of Major Jackson's highly esteemed friend and townsman, Major, afterwards Colonel, J. T. L. Preston. The young man¹ had but recently entered the ministry, and a call

¹ Rev. Thomas L. Preston.

had been extended to him by the Presbyterians of Tygart's Valley, which he had accepted, and was departing for the field of his labor.

Lexington, Va., November 12, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

This note will be presented to you by my much esteemed friend, the Rev. Thomas L. Preston, who goes, as stated in my last letter, to labor in the Lord's vineyard in your section of the state. My prayer is that he may have the zealous coöperation of all who love the Redeemer.

Your affectionate brother,

T. J. JACKSON.

Lexington, Va., December 1, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER :

I received your welcome letter this morning. I regret to learn that you have all been ill, but trust that ere this reaches you all may again be well. If Mr. Preston remains in Beverley much of his time I would be glad if it could be so arranged as to have him make his home with you, if your health and other circumstances would justify it. But I fear that it could not be arranged so. But wherever he may stay when in Beverley, you may, through the blessing of God, derive great aid from him by consulting him freely. He is reserved in his manners, and I think that the best way to treat him is to be very cordial, and to evince a desire to see a good deal of him ; but, after all, we must not depend too much on man, but look up to our heavenly Father for every needed aid. If we but live near to God, all things shall work together for our good. I regret to

hear of Aunt White's blindness. Give my love to her and uncle. I am sorry that your furniture was injured, even slightly. I didn't expect that you would fancy the French bedstead as much as ours, but such a one as ours I have never seen in New York; it is the Philadelphia style, and besides it costs more than yours. I like the French, and Anna would exchange with you if practicable, and says if you will send her yours, she will send you hers. If you had been accustomed to seeing French bedsteads all your life, you would probably think the high ones quite clumsy affairs. I hope that William¹ will exchange with Judge Thompson, and would be glad if he would do so next term,² which commences the 12th of next September. I hope if he comes that he will bring his wife with him. I did not ask Mr. Preston to take your Bible to you as he said that he was going on horseback. Anna joins me in love to you and the children.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

As will appear from the letter next ensuing, Major Jackson, like General Lee, Commodore Maury and other Confederate leaders, in fact nearly all of the Conservative population of the South, was opposed to the states withdrawing from the Union as long as their citizens could, consistently with honor, avoid doing so. Major Jackson, as is evident, is intensely concerned as to the outcome, and attaches great importance to the united prayerful appeal to be made by the public at large to the Lord on a day specially

¹ Judge Wm. L. Jackson, afterwards adjutant-general on Jackson's staff.

² Term of Circuit Court.

set apart for that purpose, petitioning that civil war may be averted.

Lexington, Va., December 29, 1860.

MY DEAR SISTER:

Among the things kept in mind for this Saturday is the writing of a letter to you. The weather here is such that any one who does not learn at the feet of Jesus would pronounce dismal, as it is penetratingly damp, in addition to wet falling snow—bordering on sleet. How different are the views of one who sees God in all things from one who sees Him in nothing. This reminds me of the peasant who said that the weather to-morrow will be just such as pleases me, because it will be such as pleases God, and that always pleases me. How do you like Mr. Thomas Preston?¹ What is being done for the Redeemer's cause in Beverley? How I would like to be with you! A visit to you is one of the pleasant things in prospect. I hope that you are all well again. Do not have too much anxiety about bringing up your children; trust in God for assistance, and it will be given. I think of our sainted mother, and take courage from God's promise, "I will show mercy unto thousands (of generations) of them that keep My commandments." From this passage a parent as well as children may draw great comfort. If a parent but keeps God's commandments, he or she may be well assured that God's mercy will rest upon the children.

I am looking forward with great interest to the 4th of January when the Christian people of this land will lift their united prayer as incense to the Throne of God in supplication for our unhappy country. What is the feeling about Beverley respecting secession? I am anx-

¹ See page 289.

ious to hear from the native part of my state. I am strong for the Union at present, and if things become no worse I hope to continue so. I think that the majority in this county are for the Union, but in counties bordering on us there is a strong secession feeling. Anna joins me in love to you and the children.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

The recent preceding letters, written late in 1860, are very calm in tone, giving no indication of the intense excitement prevailing at that period, and which was especially true in Major Jackson's immediate surroundings: many of the cadets at the Virginia Military Institute having come from the states farther south, where the spirit of secession was more intense, one state having already seceded, and a number of others were in the very act of doing so. The patriotic ardor of these young men was such as to require every effort upon the part of their instructors to restrain and keep them within anything approaching reasonable bounds. It may be mentioned that it was upon one of these occasions that Major Jackson, in addressing the cadets, made, it is asserted, the most effective speech in his life; although of only a few minutes' duration, it had the effect of completely allaying the most intense excitement. The next letter is addressed to the writer and is presumably the only expression from the pen of General Jackson giving fully and clearly his views upon the then threatening troubles between the states, and indicating in no uncertain terms what in

his opinion was the proper course to be pursued by the citizens of Virginia in the event of the invasion of that state.¹ In this connection it should be borne in mind that the date of this letter was but a year or two subsequent to the John Brown raid, and which had created such intense excitement at the time, not only in the state of Virginia, but throughout the entire South; and that the fear and unrest thereby aroused had by no means subsided. It should also be mentioned that in the war that followed no prisoners were more kindly treated and cared for than those that were surrendered to Jackson's command.

Lexington, Va., January 26, 1861.

MY DEAR NEPHEW :

Your very welcome letter reached me a few days since. I was apprehensive from not hearing from any of you for so long a time that some of you might be sick. I am glad to learn that you are progressing so well in your studies, and trust that you will be able to enter the desired class in the Institute. During the present academic year the cadets have numbered between two and three hundred. I was glad to learn your father's views respecting the state of the country; I agree very much with him. In this county there is a strong Union feeling, and the union party have unanimously nominated Samuel McDowell Moore and Jas. B. Dorman as delegates to the convention,² and I expect that they will be

¹ I well recall that although but a boy at the time, how completely this letter influenced and definitely fixed my own political convictions.
—T. J. A.

² The State Convention called to meet at the capitol in Richmond.

elected by a large majority. I am in favor of making a thorough trial for peace, and if we fail in this, and the state is invaded, to defend it with a terrific resistance. . . . I desire to see the state use every influence she possesses in order to procure an honorable adjustment of our troubles, but if after having done so the free states, instead of permitting us to enjoy the rights guaranteed to us by the Constitution of our country, should endeavor to subjugate us, and thus excite our slaves to servile insurrection in which our families will be murdered without quarter or mercy, it becomes us to wage such a war as will bring hostilities to a speedy close. People who are anxious to bring on war don't know what they are bargaining for; they don't see all the horrors that must accompany such an event. For myself I have never as yet been induced to believe that Virginia will even have to leave the Union. I feel pretty well satisfied that the Northern people love the Union more than they do their peculiar notions of slavery, and that they will prove it to us when satisfied that we are in earnest about leaving the Confederacy unless they do us justice. Your aunt joins me in love to you all. Write often.

Your affectionate uncle,
THOMAS.

The next letter is to his sister.

Lexington, Va., February 23, 1861.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your kind letter reached its destination after Anna had left for North Carolina to visit her parents, and be present at her sister Sue's wedding. She left last Monday morning. I heard from her in Richmond. She wrote that Providence had greatly blessed her. She

went as far as Richmond with a lady of this place. From Richmond she was to go to her destination with her brother William who was to leave Washington for the purpose. I feel very lonesome and greatly wish that I had you as next door neighbor. To-day is rainy and I stay pretty much indoors. I hope that Thomas will spare no pains to get all the education practicable before coming to the Institute. He will thus be enabled to take our course to greater advantage, and will be in a position to graduate higher in his class. Yesterday was celebrated with becoming honor, due to the memory of Washington. I trust that this letter will find you all in usual health, at least. My throat is troubling me to-day. I would be glad to hear from Thomas or from any of the children.

Your affectionate brother,

THOMAS.

The last letter of those preserved from Major Jackson to his sister bears date as late as April 6, 1861, but two weeks preceding the day on which he marched from Lexington, under orders from the governor of Virginia, in command of the cadets to report at Richmond. There is not a word in it indicating the approaching trouble. The reader will find revealed in this letter, however, another phase of General Jackson's character,—an open purse in the Lord's work.

Lexington, Va., April 6, 1861.

MY DEAR SISTER :

Your very kind letter met with a welcome reception, and I intended answering it last Saturday, but

was prevented. I am *very much* gratified to learn that Mr. ——— has consented to aid the church provided Mr. P—— remains with you. From Grace's letter I saw that he would remain if a proper salary could be raised. Do what you all can to make up the amount and I will be responsible for the rest. I would rather pay his whole salary than have him leave Beverley at this time. I still hope that Mr. ——— may become a Christian. I know that the change to effect this must be great, but who will limit the power of the Holy Ghost? Who can say but that your prayers and the prayer of others may be heard for Mr. ———. For years I have been praying for him and expect to continue doing so. How great has been the change in him, to agree to aid in *preaching the Gospel*. Pray on for him, and pray for *more faith*. You speak of your temptations. God withdraws His sensible presence from us to try our faith. When a cloud comes between you and the sun, do you fear that the sun will never appear again? I am well satisfied that you are a child of God, and that you will be saved in heaven, there forever to dwell with the ransomed of the Lord. So you must not doubt. The natural sun may never return to the view of the child of God, but the Son of Righteousness will. But there is one very essential thing to the child of God who would enjoy the comforts of religion, and that is he or she must live in accordance with the law of God, must have no will but His; knowing the path of duty must not hesitate for a moment, but at once walk in it. Jesus says, "My yoke is easy and My burden is light," and this is true, if we but follow Him in the prompt discharge of every duty; but we mustn't hesitate a moment about doing our duty, under all circumstances, as soon as it is made known to us; and we should always

seek by prayer to be taught our duty. If temptations are presented, you must not think that you are committing sin in consequence of having a sinful thought. Even the Saviour was presented with the thought of worshipping Satan. What could be more abhorrent to a Christian's feelings than such a thought? But such thoughts become sinful if we derive pleasure from them. We must abhor them if we would prevent our sinning. The devil injects sinful ideas into our minds to disturb our peace, and to make us sin; and it is our duty to see by prayer and watchfulness that we are not defiled by them. God has done great things, astonishing things for you and your family. Don't doubt His eternal love for you.

XXI

HOME LIFE—*Continued*

GENERAL JACKSON was very fond of children. He always manifested the greatest interest in and affection for his sister's children. He seemed to ever have them in mind, and when opportunity offered brought them interesting books and other presents. He frequently wrote to them, encouraging them to correspond with him. Some of these letters have been preserved, and, with the exception of those appearing elsewhere herein, are reproduced in the present chapter. In these letters, and in his conversation with the children, there was ever one thought uppermost,—their instruction and improvement; and so, when in their company, there was always some interesting and useful knowledge imparted. Of these letters, the one of earliest date was written to myself.

Lexington, Va., Christman, 1855.

MY DEAR NEPHEW:

Your letter has given me pleasure in various ways. I am glad to know that you can find time from your play to write me so good a letter, and hope that you will write frequently. I am sorrow¹ that your mule should have been so unmannerly as to throw you off, and even after doing this should kick you; but now since

¹*Lapsus penna*, and left for nephew to correct.

your father has sold him, all such accidents, I hope, will be avoided for the future. I remember having once been served pretty much the same way by one of those kicking creatures. It happened in this way: I went with Cousin William Brake, whom your mother can tell you about, to bring some mules home one Sunday morning, and as I was riding down a long hill, somehow or other I not only got over the mark across his shoulders, but he got me over his head, and jumped clear over me,¹ and away he went; and from that day to this I have not been very fond of mule-riding. You know that they kick out to one side like a cow. I have corrected your letter and believing that you would understand the corrections better if I would return the letter with the corrections, I have concluded to return it with this. And now I am not going to look over my letter, and I expect that there are some mistakes in it; and if so, I wish when you read it that you would point them out to your father or mother and tell me of them when you next write; and if there are many you can just correct them, and return the letter thus corrected. I hope that you will get to a good school this winter. I saw Dr. Bosworth this morning at the hotel or tavern in town. He is up paying his son John a visit during the Christmas holidays, and I wish that you would go and tell Mrs. Bosworth that I saw him; and tell her also that John is well. The doctor told me that he thought that you would have a good teacher in town this winter. I hope that you will grow up to be a good and wise man. Give much love to your father, mother, Grace and Stark.

Your affectionate uncle, THOMAS.

¹ This paragraph is quoted at pages 30 and 31, and would have been omitted here, but could not well be done.

The next letter is to the same and is dated :

Lexington, Va., April, 1856.

MY DEAR NEPHEW :

Now for a letter to you, but I would much rather talk to you if you were here ; but as I can't talk with you, I do not intend biting off my nose, etc., by denying myself the pleasure of writing. Thanks to you for your correction of my letter. And now let us see how many errors you can find in yours. Let us read your letter together, and number the wrong words. No. 1 means to exclude ; you wished to tell me to receive ; just the reverse of this, and should have said accept. No. 2 should begin with the capital E because the word is an adjective derived from the name of a nation. No. 3 should for the same reason begin with L. No. 4 should be piece ; look in your dictionary for both words piece and peace. No. 5 wants an *e* at the end. I hope that your finger has perfectly recovered. I am much pleased with your letter, and want you to write often. Your little sealing wax experiment has much gratified me. And now I hope that you will put all the words which I corrected for you down on a separate piece of paper and memorize them, so that when I next visit you they can all be repeated by you, Grace and Stark.¹ I am glad to see them doing so well in their studies, and if you study your Latin grammar well I think that you will be apt to like it after you become well acquainted with it. We generally like those things best which we can do the best. We usually find that the little boy, who can run faster than any other boy, fond of running races, and the one who can read the best of any in his class fond of reading, and the man who

¹ My sister and brother.—T. J. A.

can talk better and speak better than others fond of talking and speaking. I want to see you a good talker, but especially a good speaker; and your Latin is very important in making you a good speaker; and so study it with all your might. Besides the correction of my letter, let us see if you can correct these words, viz.: Philadelphia, inn Pensilvania. Give my love to all the family.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

Again to same.

Lexington, Va., November 3, 1856.

MY DEAR NEPHEW :

Your kind letter reached me in New York, with your mother's. . . . Yours and Grace's daguerreotypes, with the sugar egg, came into my possession this morning from John B——, for which kind remembrances of me you must all accept my thanks. It was something like having you and Grace with me to see your portraits. . . . I hope that your school-mistress has come on, and that you are all much pleased with her and she with you; and that you will learn a great deal from her. I wish that I could be with you all this evening; how delightfully would I pass my time. But though this pleasure is denied me, yet I am permitted to look forward to a coming time when we shall again meet and go together to the Sunday-school and to other places. I am in better health than I have been for a number of years. Tell Mr. Thomas¹ when he comes home that the good Mr. Lyle,² the one who kept the bookstore when he was here, and was the leader of our church music, was struck

¹ Presbyterian pastor of the Beverley Church.

² One of Major Jackson's most devoted friends.

with paralysis last night, so that his left side is disabled. We think it not improbable that he will soon bid farewell to this world. But tell Mr. Thomas that he looks forward to a brighter and happier life than this. Give much love to your father and mother, Stark and Grace, and remember me to all inquiring friends, etc., not forgetting to remember me to the servants. Write to me soon.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

Lexington, Va., December 1, 1856.

MY DEAR NEPHEW:

Thanks for your letter. I am glad that your teacher has come on and that you are hard studying, and that you came off so well at the exhibition. And I trust that by the time I get to see you that you will know a great deal about Latin and those books which you have just purchased. Remember that this is the first day of winter and that cold weather is the best time for study, and also the best time for taking exercise; and that the harder one studies the more exercise he should take, for it gives him a clear head and a healthy body. I am much obliged to you all for sending those daguerreotypes and the sugar egg. I shall have a great deal to talk about when we meet; of the fine paintings and sculpture, and beautiful countries through which I passed last summer. Tell Mr. Thomas when you have an opportunity that Mr. Lyle is much better, and that he can walk about some in his room. And how does your father like the new President, Mr. Buch (Buchanan)?¹

While I was gone I saw some funny things, too, as well as pretty ones. I remember seeing in England, in a

¹ General Jackson was a Democrat. My father was a Whig.—T. J. A.

town called Chester, about eighteen miles from Liverpool, which I will mention presently, as soon as I tell you that Chester is a town with a wall around it; and it and the city of York are about the only cities in England that are still walled. And the York walls are more recent than those of Chester, and hence not so interesting, as they don't tell us so much about the ancient Britons. It appears that the walls of Chester were built by the Britons, in order to protect themselves from the Welch, who lived a little west of Chester. But now for that funny thing, and what do you think it was? Well, I went into their largest church, called a cathedral, which once belonged to the Roman Catholics, and there, among other things, I saw a representation of the devil in the shape of a lion swallowing a man feet foremost. I never knew before that old Nick lived on men. And I saw some other things which I would like to talk to you about. Write to me soon. Give much love to your father and mother, and to Grace and Stark; and remember me to all inquiring friends.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

And again to the same :

Lexington, Va., September 13, 1858.

MY DEAR NEPHEW :

Your interesting letter of the 4th inst. has been read with great pleasure, and I was much affected by the account of your precious mother's illness; but I am thankful for her returning health and hope that she will soon be restored to at least her usual health. I have ascertained that you can get boarding in the same family with your aunt and myself, and there are two good schools at

a convenient distance. But your boarding will cost you fifteen dollars per month; your washing one dollar per month; and your teaching will be thirty-seven and one-half dollars with one teacher, or forty-five dollars should you go to the other. From what I have ascertained I would prefer the teacher who charges thirty-seven and one-half dollars; either one is good. So your expenses for ten months will be for board, teaching and washing one hundred ninety-seven and one-half dollars at the lowest estimate. As to your father's inquiry I would say that it is very important that you should *continue* your studies under a *good teacher*; and should you not come here, I hope that he will be able to get your last teacher or some other competent one for you. Should you not continue your studies, you will not only get out of the habit of studying, but you will also forget more or less of what you already know. I hope that you are now and will always continue to be a good boy; and if so, your mother need not fear that you would give me trouble. And I would be glad to have you with me. I am glad that you have progressed so far in your studies, and wish you every success in them. I have commenced my duties in the Institute; but my hearing is much impaired, and my strength a good deal reduced, although I have improved very much since returning home. As my eyes are paining me, I must close by sending love to your father, mother, Stark, Grace and yourself, in which your Aunt Anna joins me. Mr. Chenowith called on me and told me about you all.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

The following letter was written from Lexington by Major Jackson to my sister Grace.

Home, February 25, 1860.

MY DEAR NIECE:

I was much pleased to hear from your mother's letter that her health and your father's have been so good, and to hear that you have so faithful a teacher; and as you cannot always have him, I hope that you will do all you can in order to learn as much as possible whilst he is with you. And first of all, I want you to learn to spell well; give particular attention to spelling; for I don't care how much you know about other things, if you don't spell well you will be laughed at by educated people. I desire to see you have a good education, and the first step towards a good education, after learning the alphabet, is to learn to spell well. If a person commences reading before learning to spell well, he will not be apt to ever learn much more about spelling, because reading is more pleasant than spelling. When I was young I committed the blunder of learning to read before I had learned to spell well, and though I am now thirty-six years old, yet still I am mortified at my spelling words wrong. In writing this letter I have had to look in the dictionary to see how a word was spelled, and so I expect it will be all my life because I didn't give enough attention to my spelling when I was young. As your memory is better now than it may ever be, you can learn to spell more easily than when you become larger. When we are young we can recollect much better than when we are grown up. I desire to see you an educated and accomplished lady, one that your father and mother will be justly proud of. After learning to spell very well, then I want you to read histories, and travels and biographies, and such other books as will give you valuable information. I also hope that you will learn your geog-

raphy well. My father and mother died when I was very young, and I had to work for my living and education both; but your parents are both living, and have given you a kind teacher, and I trust that you will show them how thankful you are to them by studying hard. If you ever wish any information which I can give, you must ask me. I haven't written to your mother for some time, as I was afraid that I might send you the smallpox, but I don't think that there is any danger now as all are well here or about so. I heard a student of Washington College make a beautiful speech on last Wednesday; and as he is of the same name and county as your teacher, I expect that they are relatives. Give my love to all the family, and write to me soon.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

P. S. Your aunt sends love to you all and will write soon. She is not well yet.

Again to the same:

Lexington, Va., May 7, 1860.

MY DEAR NIECE:

Your letter came safely, and gives me much pleasure to see how rapidly you progress in spelling. Every word of your letter was spelled correctly, and I hope that all your words may always be treated as well as those contained in your letter; for it is treating words badly to steal a letter from them, or to impose on them a letter which they don't want. You must look at Stark's letters,—when he writes them to his sweetheart especially. And to be more serious, it would be a good plan for my sweet niece and nephews to examine each other's letters when they contain no secrets, and in that way you will

be very apt to find out all the counterfeit words which may be passing themselves off on any of you. Remember that there are a great many ways of spelling a word wrong, but there is only one way of spelling it right. I intended to send you with this letter the pattern which you requested, but your aunt wrote in my last that you have the required pattern at home. The weather is quite warm to-day. My peas are in bloom; they commenced blooming before the end of April. I hope that you have a fine garden. Write to me whenever you have leisure time. I am glad to see your teacher remaining with you. Your aunt joins me in love to you all. Her health is much improved.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

P. S. I am much obliged for the sweet flowers you sent me.

The following letter is the last of the collection; it is to the same niece, and is dated nearly a year later.

Lexington, Va., April 13, 1861.

MY DEAR NIECE:

I have been desiring to answer your letter for some time, but have from various causes been prevented. I wish I could see you again with me in Lexington; but as I don't expect to have that pleasure this spring, I hope to see you in Beverley next summer. In regard to those little histories of which you spoke, I will try and get Mr. Thomas to take a couple of them to you as a present; they may keep you reading until you have an opportunity of purchasing yours. And I think if you will write to them beforehand that they will let you have them a

quarter lower than the retail price, which was sixty cents. When I purchased mine, they let me have mine at forty-five cents, as I purchased a number of books. And I think they will do the same now. I don't like to ask Mr. Preston to carry anything, as he will probably not be able to take everything which he wants of his own, in consequence of his being on horseback, and leaving home for several months, and possibly for a year. Your aunt will attend to your request. I am sorry to learn that Mr. Chenowith's health has failed, but hope that he may soon be restored. We have had very wet weather here during the present week, but I think that it is probably about over. Your aunt joins me in love to you all. She spoke of writing to-day, but as I wanted to answer your letter she consented to postpone hers. You must write to me often.

Your affectionate uncle,

THOMAS.

P. S. I am gratified to see from your letter that you are so much pleased with Mr. Preston as a preacher.

XXII

IMPRESSIONS

IN the present and succeeding chapters I shall endeavor to describe General Jackson as I knew him, and will also give the observations and impressions formed by others who were closely associated with him for considerable periods of time.

Dr. Dabney, in writing of General Jackson, says, "His person was tall, erect and muscular. Every movement was quick and decisive ; his articulation was not rapid, but distinct and emphatic, and accompanied by that laconic and perspicuous phrase to which it was so well adapted, it often made the impression of curtness. He practised a military exactness in all the courtesies of good society. . . . His brow was exceedingly fair and expansive ; his eyes were blue, large and expressive, reposing usually in placid calm, but able none the less to flash lightning. His nose was Roman, and exceedingly well chiselled ; his cheeks ruddy and sunburnt ; his mouth firm and full of meaning ; and his chin covered with a beard of comely brown. The remarkable characteristic of his face was the contrast between its sterner and its gentler moods. As he accosted a friend, or dispensed the hospitalities of his own house, his serious, constrained look gave place to a smile so sweet and sunny in its graciousness that he was

another man. But hearty laughter especially was a complete metamorphosis. His blue eyes then danced, and his countenance rippled with a glee and *abandon* literally infantile. . . . Had there been a painter with genius subtle enough to fix upon his canvas, side by side, the spirit of the countenance with which he caught the sudden jest of a child romping on his knees, and that with which, in the crisis of battle, he gave his generals the sharp and strident command, 'Sweep the field with the bayonet!' he would have accomplished a miracle of art which the spectator could scarcely credit as true to nature. In walking his step was long and rapid, and at once suggested the idea of the dismounted horseman. It has been said that he was an awkward rider, *but incorrectly*. It is true that on the march, when involved in thought, he was heedless of the grace of his posture; but in action, or as he rode with bare head along his column, acknowledging the shouts which rent the skies, no figure could be nobler than his. His judgment of horses was excellent, and it was very rare that he was not well mounted. . . ."

To the above description I will add my personal recollection of General Jackson's appearance. He was unquestionably at home in the saddle, and nowhere did he seem to better advantage than when mounted. In riding day after day continuously, every experienced horseman knows the relief and rest to both the rider and horse that comes from an occasional shifting of one's position in the saddle. No one knew this fact better than did General Jack-

son ; and he without doubt frequently gave rest both to himself and his horse in this way, but which he would not do when on dress parade, or similar occasions. General Jackson was about five feet eleven and a half inches in height, standing in his boots ; neither sparely nor heavily built ; his weight would approximate one hundred and sixty-five to one hundred and seventy pounds. He was very erect in his carriage, or when seated. His walk was rapid, about four miles per hour, rather long stride. His complexion was blond, though his hair was quite dark, might be called black, and inclined to curl ; his whiskers, which covered his face, were a very dark brown. His eyes were large and decidedly blue in color. He was of good features and good figure, sufficiently striking in appearance to cause one in passing to turn for a better look. He was a modest, quiet, reserved man ; had but little to say of his personal experiences at West Point, in Mexico, or elsewhere. He would, of course, answer any inquiries that might be made. I remember asking him whether he had ever been struck with a bullet. He replied that after the engagement at Chapultepec he discovered the front of his coat torn—that he supposed it was caused by a bullet or fragment of canister. He did not mention to me the fact, which since seems well authenticated, that in the same engagement a cannon ball passed between his legs. I mention the last incident as confirming the statement that he was not given to speaking of himself. When in repose, General Jackson was rather solemn, serious and digni-

fied in appearance. In the care of his person and dress he was unusually neat and tidy. I never knew any one to be more particular in this respect than he was. His bearing and demeanor were invariably that of a thoughtful and polite gentleman. One never heard General Jackson express unfavorable criticism of others. Yet his judgment of men was very apt to be correct; this was observable by his avoiding as far as possible having anything to do with those of whose methods he disapproved. He did nothing by word or act to injure them; he let them alone. For instance, there was a distinguished clergyman in his own church who had married a lady who had been divorced from a former husband. Major Jackson never would attend service where this clergyman officiated. If he had reason to doubt the honesty of a merchant, he rarely if ever entered his store if the article could be procured elsewhere. If any one exhibited unfriendly feelings towards him, it mattered not how high his station, Major Jackson let him alone. It is related that on the occasion of his first meeting with President Davis—it was in General Lee's presence—upon the latter introducing him, instead of extending his hand, Jackson stood erect and gave Mr. Davis the formal military salute. He had learned that Mr. Davis had passed some unfavorable criticisms on the valley campaign—presumably the only person who ever did so.¹

¹The treatment to which Mr. Davis was subjected at the close of the Civil War, while a prisoner, welded public sentiment throughout the Southern states into a concrete mass of sympathy; but for this fact he, as

Dr. Dabney further says, "To an intimate friend he (Jackson) once remarked that the officer should always make the attainment of rank supreme, within honorable bounds, over every other consideration. Some sacrificed advancement to convenience, to secure service in a post where residence was pleasant, or to evade the authority of a harsh or unpopular superior ; but his rule had been to secure promotion, if possible, at the cost of all such considerations ; because with the advancement in rank, the chances for distinction must usually improve." And then continues, "But Jackson's love of truth and rectitude was too strong and instinctive to permit his thirsting for any other than deserved distinction. He drew broadly the mark between notoriety and true fame. . . . He had never, he said, while an ungodly man, been inclined to tempt Providence by going in advance of his duty ; he had never seen the day when he would have been likely to *volunteer* for a forlorn hope, although indifferent to the danger of

the head of the civil government of the Confederacy, would have been subjected to much severe criticism, and he would have been far from popular in the South. One of Mr. Davis's strong characteristics was his dislikes and prejudice—this unconsciously warped and influenced his better judgment. His antipathy to General Scott was so intense that he could not look with favor upon any who were admirers of that general, and this seemed to include many of those who served and gained distinction under Scott in Mexico. It was unfortunate that his judgment was so beclouded with prejudice as to prevent its measuring up to his patriotism. It may never be known how far this unfriendly feeling between Mr. Davis and General Scott influenced the latter, probably unconsciously, in remaining with the old army. Scott's words, "Let the erring sisters depart in peace," would indicate no unfriendly feeling towards the South for its course in withdrawing from the Union.

a service to which he was legitimately *ordered*." "Unaffected modesty was imprinted upon his countenance and every trait of his manners. No man ever lived who was further removed from egotism. Even his most intimate friend never heard him mention his own brilliant military career of his own accord." "His habitual frame was a calm sunshine; he was never desponding, and never frivolous. It is the testimony of his pastor (Dr. White) that he was the happiest man he ever knew." "In speaking in public his manner was rapid and emphatic, his thoughts marked by great directness, and his discourse began and ended with exceedingly little of exordium and peroration. So complete was his success that he was said to have made, in a popular assemblage of his neighborhood, one of the most effective speeches ever heard. It was but ten minutes long, but it produced unanimity in an assembly before divided." "He never talked at random, even in the most unguarded moment, or on the most trivial subject. All his statements were well considered." "He at all times preferred the simplest food, and lived absolutely without any stimulant, using neither tea, coffee, tobacco nor wine. This abstinence was from principle, not from insensibility. . . . He became so chilled on one occasion that his medical attendant, in real alarm for his safety, urged him to take some stimulant. There was nothing at hand but ardent spirits, and so he consented to take some. As he experienced a difficulty in swallowing it, his friend asked if it was very

unpleasant. 'No,' said he; 'no, I like it; I always did; *and that is the reason I never use it.*' "

There were few persons among Major Jackson's friends as near to him as was Miss Maggie Junkin, afterwards Mrs. J. T. L. Preston, sister of Major Jackson's first wife, and with whose parents he made his home the greater part of his widowhood. "She claimed that Major Jackson never revealed his innermost thoughts and feelings to any human being as he did to her during that period. That the lonely reserve of his former life had been broken up by that brief year of sweet companionship with Eleanor." ¹ "That it was a fixed principle with him to wear the aspect of cheerfulness. And indeed his nature had a side that was decidedly sportive and rollicking. He would tell amusing stories, and be so carried away with them himself as almost to roll from his chair in laughter. More contagious and hearty laughter I have never heard. He used to tell of hungry raids upon Mexican gardens, where he and his brother officers would make their supper on raw quinces; of his ascent of Orizaba, going so high that the rarified atmosphere forced the blood from his ears and nostrils; of his gay delightful life in the city of Mexico." ²

In this connection the following incident disclosing the humorous side of General Jackson's character

¹ "Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters," Mrs. Elizabeth Preston Allan, page 71, *et seq.*

² A number of incidents quoted are from an article from Mrs. Preston's pen published in the *Century Magazine* in 1886. By permission.—T. J. A.

may be given as it was related to me by the late Mr. J. W. Barclay of Lexington, Virginia.¹ Many of the young men and boys of Lexington and vicinity were in General Jackson's command. Near the date of the battle of McDowell, the citizens of Lexington concluded that it would be an opportune time to send some supplies, clothing, etc., to their sons, serving under Jackson. Upon discussing the subject, it was determined to send a committee composed of prominent citizens to visit the army in the vicinity of the place above named and take with them such articles as the members of the community might wish to forward. The committee selected included Mr. Barclay's father, General Francis H. Smith, Judge John W. Brockenbrough and several others. General Jackson knew these gentlemen quite well. He extended to them suitable greetings and courtesies. During their stay at the camp it was suggested among themselves that the occasion was a fitting one to have an interview with the General in regard to his proposed military operations. (It should be borne in mind that this occurred at comparatively an early stage in the war.) The committee felt some reluctance in approaching the General on the subject. After conferring together, it was finally agreed that the accomplished and suave Judge Brockenbrough be honored with their confidence, and he was thereupon chosen as the member to approach the General and make known to him the desires of the committee.

¹ The incident here narrated has appeared in print heretofore, but with the omission of some of the facts which justifies its republication.—T. J. A.

The selection of the judge for this important mission is ample proof of the wisdom of his associates. Upon his approaching the General and making known the wishes of the visitors, General Jackson asked the judge whether he could keep a secret; to which the reply was made, "Why, certainly; I think so, General." To which, from the General, "Well, Judge, so can I." It should be stated that General Jackson had most friendly feelings for the genial judge, and knew perfectly well that the latter would not only take the reply good-humoredly, but would have more than one hearty laugh over the incident, and which he thereafter did. I remember having heard him, on one occasion, describe the interview in his most inimitable style. The General's reply was not so pleasantly received, however, so it was said, by one of the other members of the committee, to whom it seemed the very height of indignity.

Another incident that may be mentioned was related to the writer by Colonel Thomas M. Semmes, a former graduate and later a professor at the Virginia Military Institute. While at Harper's Ferry, following the John Brown raid, Major Jackson and Semmes, who was at that time a cadet, visited Washington; and being there over night occupied the same room at the hotel. Semmes noticed that Major Jackson placed his purse and watch in his sock, and left it on the floor, remarking that he always did so, as a burglar would be less likely to look there for it. The next morning Cadet Semmes went out early, and later met Major Jackson, and

they started to go to the station. They had not proceeded far when Major Jackson stated that he would be compelled to return to the hotel. He did so, but arrived at the station in time for the train, remarking to Semmes "that he had neglected to tell him that when he placed his purse and watch in his sock, always to be sure to take it out the next morning." It appeared that the Major had replaced his socks with a fresh pair and left the soiled ones with their contents on the floor.

Quoting again from Mrs. Preston, she says "that Jackson's organism was of a singularly sensitive character. . . . His revulsions at scenes of horror, or even descriptions of them, was almost inconsistent in one who had lived the life of a soldier. He has told me that his first sight of a mangled and swollen corpse on a Mexican battlefield, as he rode over it the morning after the conflict, filled him with as much sickening dismay as if he had been a woman."¹ "That he never thrust his religious views upon others. The fact is, he maintained a degree of reticence in the matter of alluding to personal religious faith that many Christian men might find fault with; and it was only by dint of urgency that the inmost springs of action were often discovered. In all the intimacy of our close home life, I do not recall that he ever volunteered any expression of what is called 'religious experience.'" "No harsh judgments or criminations were ever heard from his lips. Though most discriminating in

¹ *Century Magazine*.

his estimates of men, he was reticent to the last degree in passing judgment upon them. 'Judge not that you be not judged' he understood to be as positive a command as 'Thou shalt not steal.' Yet he would say, 'It is quite contrary to my nature to keep silence when I cannot but disapprove. Indeed I may as well confess that it would often give me *real satisfaction* to express just what I feel, but this would be to disobey the divine precept, and I dare not do it.' "

Dr. Dabney says, "Major Jackson was a man whom it was no easy matter to know ; not because he sought to hide himself from scrutiny, nor because he was in the slightest degree covert in what he said or did, but because there was a breadth and depth of character about him that would never be suspected by the superficial and bigoted. He was preëminently modest, and inexpressibly opposed to self-display, and equally considerate of the taste and character of those with whom he held intercourse. . . . His scrupulous and delicate politeness made it always his aim to render others easy and comfortable in his presence. . . . He never introduced a subject merely because it was one with which he was most at home, or on which he could best exhibit his talents, or parade his information. With a clergyman or lady he never introduced politics or military science. Having led the conversation with polite deference to that topic upon which his guest seemed best fitted to shine, he became usually an attentive but almost silent listener, and made no dis-

closure of his own stores of knowledge, or of profound and original reflections on the same subject, although they were often far more complete than those of the person whom he thus accepted as an instructor. And had not subsequent facts evinced his superiority, his acquaintance would have felt it almost incredible that one who was so well qualified to speak with confidence should so entirely suppress the desire to speak. Thus many a minister of the Gospel has been led by him to speak on ethical, ecclesiastical, or theological subjects, and has carried away the impression that the modest soldier, although almost ignorant of the alphabet of those sciences, had at least the merit of an earnest appetite for the knowledge of them, when in truth Jackson had read as much upon them as he had, and with more close attention, and possessed more matured opinions concerning them." "In the sphere which of right belonged to him, he rarely if ever asked advice. No man knew his proper place better, or held it more tenaciously ;¹ and no man ever accorded this right to others more promptly or scrupulously." "As a member and officer of the church, he was eminently deferential to his pastor as his superior officer. But, as a commander in camp, he would no more defer to the

¹ An instance of this trait may be cited. On one occasion General Lee suggested to Jackson the advisability of imparting information to his leading generals as to any proposed movements of his army and mentioned A. P. Hill, remarking that anything disclosed to Hill would be kept in strict confidence, and that such a course would relieve him (Jackson) of much detail work. Jackson listened very respectfully, said nothing to indicate what he might do. He made no change whatever in his policy.

judgment of that pastor than to that of the humblest of his own soldiers."

Dr. Dabney in writing of the period before he attained distinction says, "In finding a solution of the erroneous estimate of Jackson . . . something is to be attributed to the character of the little society in which he moved. It was cultivated, but limited in extent; and, accordingly, it had its own closely defined standard, by comparison with which every man was tried. In a society more cosmopolitan, such characters as Jackson are less apt to be misapprehended, because it consists not of one, but of many coteries, and because contact with diversified forms of talent and cultivation gives breadth and tolerance to the views. This is but saying, in substance, what the voice of fame has since pronounced, that the wider the arena on which he acted, the greater his capacity appeared. But there were always a few, and they the most competent to understand a gifted nature, who declared Jackson to be a man of mark. To these chosen intimates he unbosomed himself, modestly, yet without reserve. His views of public affairs were broad, and elevated far above the scope of the party journals which assumed to dictate public opinion. His mind was one which would have made him a subtle and profound jurist. The few who attributed to him this type of intellect had their estimate fully sustained by the manner in which he discussed those numerous questions of a judicial nature which claim the attention of the leader of great armies. In the interpretation

of orders and army regulations ; in the settlement of rank between competing claimants ; in the proceedings of courts martial ; in the discrimination between military and civil jurisdiction, which is often so difficult ; his mind always approached the question from an original point of view, and rarely did it fail to be decisive to every attentive understanding. But it was especially in the discussion of military affairs that the mastery of his genius appeared. When these topics were introduced, his mind assumed its highest animation ; he disclosed a knowledge which surprised his auditors, and his criticisms were profound." "Every fibre of Jackson's being, as formed by nature and grace alike, was antagonistic to fanaticism and radicalism. . . . Especially was his character unlike Cromwell's in its freedom from cant ; his correct taste abhorred it. Sincerity was his grand characteristic. With him profession always came short of the reality ; he was incapable of affecting what he did not feel. His action was always vigorous, and at the call of justice could be rigid. Duty was with him the ever-present and supreme sentiment. Such was his dread of its violation that no sin appeared to him small ; and the distinction between great and little obligations . . . seemed scarcely to have any place in his mind. To him all duties were great." "The perceptions of his mind were so vigorous and distinct, and seized so exclusively on the main points of consideration, that all conclusions were with him perfectly defined. Hence there was, to him, but one formula

of words which gave an exact expression to his thought. If one complained that his comprehension was imperfect, and asked for another statement, Jackson had no answer to make save to repeat his first formula. Now, to the leader whose function it is to give orders to be obeyed, this trait is invaluable. The very force and clearness with which Jackson's mind moved along from its premises to its conclusions made it improbable that it would travel any second path, less plain than the one first perceived by his strong intuitions." ¹

¹ Dabney, p. 113 *et seq.*

XXIII

IMPRESSIONS—*Continued*

THE following extracts from an article which appeared some years since in the *Southern Breeze* from the pen of Major Geo. P. C. Rumbough, entitled "An Ex-Cadet's Recollection of Professor Thomas J. Jackson (Stonewall)," gives an interesting side light of Major Jackson as a professor, and discloses the relations existing between him and some of the cadets. To those who knew General Jackson it will be evident that Major Rumbough has written with the accuracy of a close observer.

"Silent, strict, precise, his very attitude in the class-room was a lesson and a curb to the cadet student. Whether in the class-room or during the drill in battery, frivolity was never countenanced or for a moment tolerated. Standing upon the elevated platform of this class-room, firmly erect, and in the exact position of a soldier, his voice was firm, quick in questioning or demonstration. He was quick to detect ignorance of the subject in question, and equally quick to recognize and reward a thorough demonstration." . . . "Frequently the recitation would be so thoroughly satisfactory to the professor that with consummate skill, taking the cue from his smiling face, some tactful cadet would lead the Major by . . . a skillful question to a recital of personal

experience in Mexico, where he won his two brevets in a short time by his gallantry in handling his artillery against the Mexicans. His terse and vivid description of the climate, scenery, marches and incidents of the campaign in Mexico linger still in memory and forges another link in loving remembrance. It was a wonderful unbending from recitation to conversation. It was the quick spoken question, 'How's that?' The firm mouth between two square jaws, the flashing, penetrating eyes, all spoke duty, duty, duty; in the other, there was a joyous relaxation of every lineament of his face; the voice was modulated in keeping, without an apparent effort, and the cadets' tyrant of the class-room had become the chum of the stoop. His extraordinary observance of every rule of the institution was but in keeping with every other rule of his life. There was not one jot of subserviency in his whole career during my stay in barracks as a cadet. His study, his artillery drill, his church and his every duty was characteristically methodical, and strictly punctual. As a professor, he knew no favorite; he studied his pupils, weighed them, and treated them accordingly. I have a distinct recollection of a friendly criticism of myself, which almost paralyzed my class of 46 with astonishment. The entire corps of full professors sat upon a raised platform to hear the 'Original declamations' of five or six of the contestants for honors in the first or senior class. Several of the speakers were palpably guilty of barefaced plagiarism and should have been ruled out, but some pro-

fessors, unlike Major Jackson, had their favorites, and commented upon the aspirants in words of praise and commendation. Knowing the status of affairs, I was justly indignant, but helpless and indeed hopeless. When I arose, I confess I spoke with fervor, and perhaps my sentences were lurid, but not so much as to call for the profound scoring accorded me by the two highest officers of the institution. It had been the rule previously, when these two worthy critics got through, to call upon the remaining three junior professors for their comments, which in each previous case had been refused; but when in my case the superintendent's head was nodded to Major Jackson, like a flash he answered, 'I beg leave to differ with you, gentlemen; his words are his own, his gestures not inappropriate; and as to his fervid energy, age and the man will temper that,' etc., and further took my part firmly and stubbornly, and this, too, when he had ordered me out of the section room the day before. If a shell had dropped in that declamatory throng, no greater astonishment would have fallen upon those gaping cadets. It was the innate love of justice, his religious duty which always inspired the soul of this great man. No man on earth felt or taught more faithfully the necessity of the faithful performance of duties prescribed, in whatever form the necessity arose. A man of sterling principle, by lesson and example he taught it, and woe unto the infractor; the modest and polite Christian gentleman recognized an honest and conscientious performance

of duty, to God and man, above all the riches of earth. I often noticed him in extreme excitement; his cheeks, especially his ears, got as red as hot blood could make them; his eyes then were blazing. I remember an incident which will, in a small degree, give an idea of his nerve and self-control. Barracks occupied a long front and two wings of the three sides of a rectangular parallelogram; between the wings or short sides was the arsenal with tin roof. The barracks was four stories high, with stoops, or porches, the whole length of second, third and fourth stories. The four brass field-pieces were generally parked in the space in front of the arsenal, and in the area included between it and the rectangular inclosure. During the drill of the second class at the guns, I have known cadets to throw heavy missiles upon the tin roof of the arsenal, calculating to a nicety where the falling object would most likely strike the instructor, Major Jackson. Down it would come, with a thud to startle the most wary, frequently grazing the rigid instructor and falling at his very feet, but never a notice, a sign or the slightest regard was visible in his face or his actions. The same tone, the same precision of drill, 'Ram home again, Mr. Hood; once again, Mr. Hood. Ah! that's better,' and so on to the end. When the men were dismissed, and the sabre of the commander was returned to its scabbard, there was an eagle glance bestowed upon the stoops, and woe be to the suspect, with the impudence of a dare-devil; no guilty man could thwart the scrutiny of that almost

savage glance. . . . Thomas J. Jackson, Prof. V. M. I., was never an enthusiast, religious, moral or political. . . . He was slow to think, frequently pausing for an unexpected period to answer a question in the class-room. But when he decided, it came like a flash. No man was farther from being a religious enthusiast, but no man was nearer to God in his religion. . . . It was always a matter of study to me how to separate the professor and officer from the companion. It was seemingly like two different people, receiving an order, and dwelling in conversational intercourse; the man in each was as diverse as two separate beings could be. The frankness, sociability and winning smile of Major Jackson in social converse was as captivating as it was a source of joy. I have attempted, in my humble way, to give an insight into the character, manners and moral attributes of Stonewall Jackson as a preceptor, as I knew him. In the light of truth and experience he looms up to my vision a grand exemplar of a model teacher, just, ever polite, honest, faithful, brave, pious in practise as in profession; he loved God first, next his fellow man, and fought and died for his country. What a culmination of glorious attributes to be possessed by one soul, who in their possession was an humble follower of God, as modest as a woman, and could be as gentle as a little child. . . . His life was a lesson to the student, and an example for all mankind, but an enigma alone to the heedless and thoughtless.”

The late Captain A. Elhart, of Rockbridge County, Virginia, in a letter addressed to me under date of May 31, 1913, writes, "In the winter of 1862 I was commissioned as captain and paymaster and assigned to General G. W. Smith's command. In the spring of 1862, when General Jackson was ordered to the 'Valley,' he applied to General Joseph E. Johnston, who was in command at that time, to have me transferred to his command. I was anxious to be with him, as all or nearly all of his troops came from the 'Valley'; but General Smith would not consent to it, so both were disappointed. I didn't see him (General Jackson) until after the seven days' battle around Richmond. I learned where his headquarters were, so one Sunday morning I rode to hunt him up, and our meeting was very cordial. After talking a while about home, etc., I said, 'General, we are near Richmond; if you would ride in and see the secretary of war, one word from you would get me transferred to you.' He looked up and said, 'Captain, this is no Sunday talk. Come and see me to-morrow.' I excused myself and said, 'General, I came to-day because I didn't know whether I would *find* you here to-morrow.' He asked, 'Who told you so?' I said, 'No one; and I must quote Scripture on you, "by their fruits ye shall know them."' He then said, 'Come and see me to-morrow morning.' So Monday morning we rode together to Richmond, and as stated, it didn't take five minutes, after he saw the secretary, until I received the order to report to General Jackson. Thus I consider that he honored

me . . . for he took the trouble to ride four miles to see the secretary in person. Thus began my war family relation with the General. I was with him almost daily, usually about 4 P. M., etc. He was very considerate of his army. He would see personally that the men received their rations as promptly as possible (they were very short sometimes); neither would he nor any of his staff officers be allowed to receive anything from the commissary until all the men were supplied first. He was a man of the strongest faith I ever knew. . . . All the staff officers (some were no Daniels nor Pauls) experienced a feeling of protection when, during the battle, they were close to him. He would write orders sitting on his 'sorrel,' bullets flying in every direction, entirely regardless of them. He was a man of few words generally, but by no means repellent. He would enjoy a good joke as well as any one. During our winter quarters near Fredericksburg, one afternoon when I went to see him, in talking about the cruelty of the war, I told him, 'It seems hard to reconcile for man against man to take the life of each other.' After a little he said, 'Well, captain, what would you do with the Yankees if you had them in a nutshell?' This rather surprised me; after a moment I said, 'General, you heard my opinion about taking our fellow men's lives, but I think I would *squeeze them hard, till they holloed enough.*' I remained at the same headquarters till we 'gave up,' and served four full years, and under similar circumstances would do it again."

XXIV

CIVIL WAR

MAJOR JACKSON was deeply concerned about his native section of Western Virginia, and it is evident from his letters that he hoped and expected to be ordered there upon his entering the service. In the letter to his niece, as early as April 13, 1861, at page 307, he writes, "I hope to see you in Beverley next summer." In one week from the date of this letter he received orders to report at Richmond with the cadets. Within a week after Major Jackson had arrived at Camp Lee (Richmond), in pursuance of the above order, the council, seconded by Governor Letcher, recommended his appointment as colonel of the Virginia forces, and commander at Harper's Ferry. The next day the appointment was sanctioned by the convention. The governor handed him his commission on Saturday, April 27th, and he departed at once for his command. Colonel J. T. L. Preston, in writing to his wife from Richmond, near this period, says, "Jackson with the rank of colonel goes to supersede General Harper at Harper's Ferry. It is most flattering to him. Say to his wife that it is the command of all others which he would most prefer. He is a noble fellow, and I rejoice in his success."¹

¹ "Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters."

In a letter written from Harper's Ferry under date of June 5, 1861, by Major (Colonel) Jackson in reply to a letter received by him from Hon. J. M. Bennett, at the time auditor of the state of Virginia, a talented and influential friend and connection, wherein he had suggested that Jackson be commissioned a brigadier-general and be sent into Northwestern Virginia, he writes :

MY DEAR COLONEL :

Your very kind letter, proposing, if I so desire, to make me a brigadier-general and send me to the Northwest, in command of all troops of that region, has been received, and meets my grateful approbation. The sooner it is done the better. Have me ordered at once. That country is now bleeding at every pore. I feel a deep interest in it and have never appealed to its people in vain, and trust it may not be so now. I agree with you fully respecting the advantages named in your letter.
. . . Believe me with lasting gratitude ever yours,

T. J. JACKSON.

And of same date he writes to same :

Harper's Ferry, June 5, 1861.

MY DEAR COLONEL :

Lest the letter mailed this morning, and in which I thankfully accepted the opportunity of being made a brigadier-general and put in command of all the Northwestern troops should fail to reach you, I send this by private hands. Please have me ordered forthwith.

Very gratefully yours,

T. J. JACKSON.

The above correspondence, as is evident from the letter that follows, addressed to the same friend, had reference to a commission to be issued from the state of Virginia, but which power that state had later delegated or transferred by agreement to the Confederate States Government, and to which, in pursuance thereof, General R. E. Lee had, on the eighth day of June, 1861, turned over the command of the military and naval forces of the state.

*Headquarters, First Brigade,
Camp Stevens, June 24, 1861.*

MY DEAR COLONEL :

At present I am in command of the Virginia Volunteers organized into the First Brigade of the Army of the Shenandoah, and have my headquarters on the road from Martinsburg to Williamsport, and about four miles distant from the former place. On Saturday last the enemy commenced crossing at Williamsport into Virginia and (I) immediately advanced with one regiment of infantry and a battery of artillery, but it amounted to nothing, as the enemy recrossed the river into Maryland. They are evidently afraid to advance. In your last letter you stated: "I presume all commissions will issue from the Confederate Government; if so, I have no pledge for any commission, but I shall never cease until I get it. You will hear from me soon again." Knowing your success in carrying your measures, the energy with which you press them, and not having heard from you, the thought struck me that there might be some obstacle in the way which, if made known to me, I might be able to remove. I am in command of a promising brigade, and I would be greatly gratified if you could secure me a

brigadier-generalcy, and if I cannot be ordered to Northwestern Virginia, of course I would be continued in my present command, and as I am so far west, an opportunity might offer of having me with my command ordered into that region. Providence has greatly blessed me in securing good staff officers in the quartermaster, commissary and ordnance departments, which are so essential to the efficiency of the troops. All are anxious for active service. *I feel deeply for my own section of the state, and would, as a brigadier-general, willingly serve under General Garnett¹ in its defense.* I know him well. There are three brigades under General Johnston, and a few days since Brigadier-General Bee was assigned to the command of one of them, and at any time, so far as I know, another may be assigned to the command of mine, unless you can induce President Davis to make the appointment soon by my promotion.² Please let me hear from you when convenient, and ever believe me your grateful friend.

T. J. JACKSON.

P. S. Please direct your answer to Martinsburg, Berkeley County.

Dr. Dabney in writing of General Jackson while at Harper's Ferry (1861) says, "He was his own engineer, and reconnoitered all the ground for himself.

¹ General R. S. Garnett was killed the following month, July 14, 1861, at Corricks Ford, (West) Va.

² The letter of appointment as brigadier-general in the Provisional Army was dated June 17, 1861. The promotion had been recommended by General Johnston, although it had already been determined upon by the Confederate Government.

He constructed very few intrenchments ; and, to the end of his career, it was characteristic that he made almost no use of the spade and pick." " That he was accustomed during the active campaigns to live in a common tent, like those of the soldiers." " From the beginning he manifested that reticence and secrecy as to all military affairs for which he was afterwards so remarkable. His maxim was that 'in war, mystery was the key to success.' He argued that no human shrewdness could foretell what item of information might not give some advantage to an astute adversary, and that therefore it was the part of wisdom to conceal everything."¹

Dr. Hunter McGuire, late medical director of Jackson's corps, relates the following incident as clearly evidencing Jackson's tenderness of heart : " A short time before the second Manassas battle there came from Lexington a fine lad whose parents were dear friends of General Jackson.² The General invited him to stay at headquarters a few days before joining his company, and he slept and messed with us. We all became much attached to the young fellow, and Jackson, in his gentle, winning way, did his best to make him feel at home and at his ease ; the lad's manners were so gentle, kindly and diffident, and his beardless, blue-eyed boyish face so manly and so

¹ This same course, including exclusion of newspaper correspondents, which Jackson rigidly required is, at the present writing, being, for the first time in modern warfare, strictly enforced by the several warring nations of Europe.

² Willie Preston, a son of Col. J. T. L. Preston, at an earlier period of Jackson's staff.

handsome. Just before the battle he reported for duty with his company. The night of the day of the great battle I was telling the General of the wounded, as we stood over the fire, where black Jim, his servant, was making some coffee. . . . I mentioned the name of the lad and told him he was mortally wounded. . . . The General's face was a study. The muscles in his face were twitching convulsively, and his eyes were all aglow. He gripped me by the shoulder till it hurt me, and in a savage, threatening manner asked why I had left the boy. In a few seconds he had recovered himself, and turned and walked off into the woods alone. He soon came back, however, and I continued my report of the wounded and dead. We were still sitting by the fire drinking coffee out of our tin cups when I said, 'We have won this battle by the hardest kind of fighting.'¹ And he answered me very gently and softly, 'No, no; we have won it by the blessing of Almighty God.' "

It may be mentioned that it had been the intention of General Jackson, later on, to offer the youth described a position as aide-de-camp on his staff. The following letter written by General Jackson to Mrs. Preston, the sister of his first wife, gives an insight into Jackson's tender feelings as evinced towards his slaves. It is written from Centreville (Va.), and bears date October 23, 1861.²

¹"Stonewall Jackson." An address by Dr. Hunter McGuire.

²"Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters," by Elizabeth Preston Allan. By permission.—T. J. A.

MY DEAR MAGGIE:

I am much obliged for your kind letter of the 19th, and for the arrangement respecting Amy and Emma (slaves owned by Jackson). Please have the kindness to go to Winny Buck's occasionally and see that Amy is well cared for, and that not only she, but also Emma, is well clothed. I am under special obligations for the religious instruction you have given Amy, and hope that it may be in your power to continue it. Remember me to her very kindly on the first opportunity, and say that I hope she has rich heavenly consolation. This evening I expect our own pastor (Dr. White) and Dr. McFarland. I will send some money by Dr. White for you to use as occasion may require for Amy and Emma, and I will so manage to keep a supply in the Rockbridge Bank, or elsewhere, subject to your order. . . .

Your affectionate friend,

T. J. JACKSON.

And later to same on same subject:

Winchester, Va., November 16, 1861.

MY DEAR MAGGIE:

More than once your kind and touching letter respecting the sainted Amy brought tears to my eyes. For several months before leaving home I was impressed with her great devotion to the cause of our beloved Redeemer. She was evidently ripening rapidly for a better world, where I hope that we, and the ransomed of the Lord, may be privileged to join her. I am very grateful to you for your Christian kindness to her. If the money I sent by Dr. White is not enough to meet the little demands connected with her funeral, please let me know how much more is required, and I will promptly attend

to having it forwarded. I am much gratified to know that you gave her a decent burial, and that so many followed her remains to the grave. Though such numbers cannot affect the dead, yet such demonstrations of regard are gratifying to the living. . . .

Very affectionately yours,

T. J. JACKSON.¹

Dr. Dabney says Jackson was popular with the slaves. "He was the black man's friend." A number of those living in his quarter of the town petitioned to be admitted on Sabbath nights, along with his own servants, to his evening domestic worship. He submitted their request to his pastor and the owners of the slaves and their approbation was gladly given. He further says, "To his own slaves he was a methodical and exact but conscientious master. Absolute obedience was the rule of his household; and if he found chastisement was necessary to secure this it was faithfully administered. He required all his slaves to attend the domestic worship of his family morning and evening."

I remember a short time after going to Lexington of being with Major Jackson, probably for a walk, when a negro man approached and accosted the Major. My uncle stopped and had some little conversation with him. I, of course, heard the conversation, and when he had passed on I made some inquiries of him about the negro; he, in answer to my questions, said, "It is Albert, a negro man I

¹ "Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters," by Elizabeth Preston Allan. By permission.—T. J. A.

bought some time ago, and I am letting him work out and pay for himself as he makes the money." He further stated that he got plenty of work and good wages. My impression is that he didn't charge him interest, although I am not sure of this, and that the negro was getting along very well in his payments.¹

Mrs. Preston says, "It was pleasant to walk about the town with him (Jackson) and see the veneration with which the negroes saluted him, and his unfailing courtesy towards them. To the old gray-headed negro who bowed before him he would lift his cap as courteously as to his commander-in-chief."

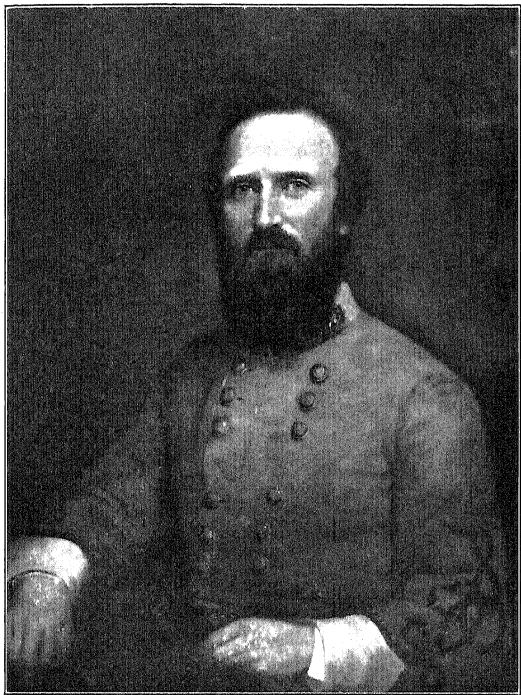
Dr. Dabney in describing a visit to General Jackson in the autumn of 1861 by Dr. White, his Lexington pastor, accompanied by another clergyman,² and who lodged in his quarters five days and nights, preaching daily, writes, "In the General's quarters he found his morning and evening worship as regularly held as it had been at home. Jackson modestly proposed to his pastor to lead in this worship, which he did until the last evening of his stay, when, to the usual request for prayers, he answered, 'General, you have often prayed with and for me at home; be so kind as to do so to-night.' Without a word of objection, Jackson took the sacred volume, and read and prayed. 'And never while

¹ Albert was still living in 1862. General Jackson mentions him in a letter to Colonel Preston. "Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters."

² Rev. Dr. McFarland.

life lasts,' said the pastor, 'can I forget that prayer. He thanked God for sending me to visit the army, and prayed that He would own and bless my ministrations, both to officers and privates, so that many souls might be saved. He gave thanks for what it had pleased God to do for the church in Lexington, to which both of us belong, especially for the revivals He had mercifully granted to that church, and for the many preachers of the Gospel sent forth from its membership. He then prayed for the pastor and every member of his family, for the ruling elders, the deacons, and the private members of the church, such as were at home, and especially such as then belonged to the army. He then pleaded, with such tenderness and fervor, that God would baptize the whole army with His Holy Spirit that my own hard heart was melted into penitence, gratitude and praise. . . .' Afterwards he said, 'Doctor, I would be glad to learn more fully than I have yet done what your views are of the prayer of faith.' A conversation then commenced which was continued long after the hour of midnight, in which, it is candidly confessed, the pastor received more instruction than he imparted."

"General Jackson was always concerned for the spiritual welfare of his soldiers. And as illustrating the liberality of his religious views in relation to securing chaplains in the army, he wrote: 'Each branch of the church should send into the army some of its most prominent ministers who are distinguished for their piety, talents and zeal; and



GENERAL JACKSON, AT WINCHESTER, VA., IN 1862.

"Send more men and fewer orders." Telegram to Confederate War Department.

such ministers should labor to produce concert of action among chaplains and Christians in the army. These ministers should give special attention to preaching to regiments which are without chaplains, and induce them to take steps to get chaplains, to let the regiments name the denomination from which they desire chaplains selected, and then to see that suitable chaplains are secured. A bad selection of a chaplain may prove a curse instead of a blessing. If the few prominent ministers thus connected with each army would cordially coöperate, I believe that glorious fruits would be the result. Denominational distinctions should be kept out of view and not touched upon; and, as a general rule, I do not think that a chaplain who would preach denominational sermons should be in the army. His congregation is his regiment, and it is composed of persons of various denominations. I would like to see no question asked in the army as to what denomination a chaplain belongs, but let the question be, "Does he preach the Gospel?" The neglect of spiritual interests in the army may be partially seen in the fact that not half of my regiments have chaplains.'"¹

¹"Life of Jackson," Dabney.

XXV

IMPRESSIONS—DEATH

IN the opinion of the writer the person never lived who could fathom the depth of General Jackson's mind. This is exemplified fully and frequently in his career in the Civil War. Notwithstanding the fact that in the war with Mexico he had received a larger number of promotions than any other of the young officers in the same period of time, yet in the beginning of the Civil War he was not generally regarded as capable of independent command. When he was commissioned a colonel of date April 27, 1861, that rank was thought to equal his capacity, and there was serious misgiving on the part of many as to the risk of placing him in independent command of as important a post as Harper's Ferry, upon his being assigned to that position.

When his success won for him within less than two months' service the commission of brigadier-general, the opinion prevailed, and it was the subject of common remark, that that was his limit ; and so on through the several successive promotions, there were many who each time believed that Jackson had been advanced beyond his capacity ; and this, notwithstanding every move that he had made had

resulted in success. And after he had been commissioned a lieutenant-general, it has been said, there was great uneasiness felt on the part of many during a few days' absence of General Lee from the army at Fredericksburg, when Jackson was the ranking officer present, for fear of some occurrence in Lee's absence. And now fifty years after his death, and when his campaigns have been studied and discussed by the military leaders and students of the great nations of the world, and adopted as subjects of study in their several highest military colleges, including those of England and America, his reputation has steadily grown—a fact so universally recognized that it might hardly be deemed necessary to mention it. As indicative of the truth of this, and the interest at the present day in Jackson's name beyond the confines of his own country, the following quotation from a letter received by me from Mrs. Henderson, the widow of the late Col. G. F. R. Henderson, of Lord Roberts' staff, wherein, in referring to her distinguished husband's "Life of Jackson," she writes, "Only about one-fourth of the copies that are sold every year are sold in America."

Mr. Irvin S. Cobb writes¹ that Lord Northcliffe, John T. McCutcheon and himself spent the day at Lord Roberts' home in Surrey. "In speaking of the American Civil War Lord Roberts² said, 'America produced some magnificent soldiers in those four

¹ *The Saturday Evening Post*, December, 1914.

² Commander-in-chief of the British Army.

years, and the greatest of them, to my way of thinking, was Stonewall Jackson.

“‘In my opinion Stonewall Jackson was one of the greatest natural military geniuses the world ever saw. I will go even further than that—as a campaigner in the field he never had a superior. In some respects I doubt whether he ever had an equal.’

“Some of us mentioned that it was said of Jackson that in the latter years of his life he read only two books, the Bible and the campaigns of Napoleon. ‘Not so bad a choice, if a man had to confine his library to only two ‘books,’ said Lord Roberts, ‘an admirable choice for a soldier, at any rate. Any soldier might learn much by studying the campaigns of Napoleon, and Napoleon might have learned a good deal, too, by studying the campaigns of Jackson, had the order of the times in which the two men lived been reversed.’

“In passing through the library of the house we came on a steel engraving of the Southerner, placed against the wall where it faced Lord Roberts when he sat at his desk.”

In the *Baltimore Sun* of date July 2, 1913, there appeared an editorial on General Jackson in connection with the erection of an equestrian statue to his memory in Richmond, from which the following extracts are taken. “. . . Jackson is one of the Civil War figures who grows larger the longer he is studied, and who makes an extraordinary appeal to the popular as well as to the military imagination. He was as strong and singular in character as he

was unusual and masterful in genius. . . . What Jackson was in character and soul innumerable writers have tried to describe with more or less success, leaving many of us still seeing him as through a glass darkly. What he was in a military sense we know from the almost universal belief that had he not fallen at Chancellorsville the battle of Gettysburg either would never have occurred, or would have had a different termination. . . ."

The subjoined account of the wounding and death of General Jackson is from the pen of Dr. Hunter McGuire, medical director of Jackson's corps, A. N. Va., who was Jackson's friend and constant attendant throughout his illness. The article appeared in the *Richmond Medical Journal* of May, 1866, and has since then been published in "The Confederate Cause and Conduct in the War between the States," by Hunter McGuire and George L. Christian.¹

WOUNDING AND DEATH OF JACKSON

Supported upon either side by his aides, Captains James Smith and Joseph Morrison, the General moved slowly and painfully toward the rear. Occasionally resting for a moment to shake off the exhaustion which pain and the loss of blood produced, he at last reached the line of battle, where most of the men were lying down to escape the shell and canister with which the Federals raked the road. General Pender rode up here to the little party and asked who was wounded, and Captain Smith, who

¹ By permission.

had been instructed by General Jackson to tell no one of his injury, simply answered, "A Confederate officer;" but Pender recognized the General, and springing from his horse, hurriedly expressed his regret, and added that his line was so much broken he feared it would be necessary to fall back. At this moment the scene was a fearful one. The air seemed to be alive with the shrieks of shells and the whistling of bullets; horses, riderless and mad with fright, dashed in every direction; hundreds left the ranks and fled to the rear, and the groans of the wounded and dying mingled with the wild shouts of others to be led again to the assault. Almost fainting as he was from loss of blood, fearfully wounded, and, as he thought, dying, Jackson was undismayed by this scene. The words of Pender seemed to rouse him to life. Pushing aside the men who supported him, he stretched himself to his full height, and answered feebly, but distinctly enough to be heard above the din of the battle: "General Pender, you must hold on to the field; you must hold out to the last." It was Jackson's last order upon the field of battle. Still more exhausted by this effort, he asked to be permitted to lie down for a few moments, but the danger from the fire and capture by the Federal advance was too imminent, and his aides hurried him on. A litter having been obtained, he was placed upon it, and the bearers passed on as rapidly as the thick woods and rough ground permitted. Unfortunately, one of the bearers was struck down, and the litter, having been supported at

each of the four corners by a man, fell and threw the General to the ground. The fall was a serious one, and as he touched the earth he gave, for the first time, expression to his suffering, and groaned piteously. Captain Smith sprang to his side, and as he raised his head a bright beam of moonlight made its way through the thick foliage and rested upon the pale face of the sufferer. The captain was startled by its great pallor and stillness, and cried out, "Oh, General, are you seriously hurt?" "No," he answered; "don't trouble yourself, my friend, about me," and presently added something about winning the battle first, and attending to the wounded afterwards. He was placed upon the litter again, and carried a few hundred yards, when I met him with an ambulance. I knelt down by him, and said, "I hope you are not badly hurt, General." He replied, very calmly but feebly, "I am badly injured, Doctor; I fear that I am dying." After a pause he continued, "I am glad you have come. I think the wound in my shoulder is still bleeding." His clothes were saturated with blood, and hemorrhage was still going on from the wound. Compression of the artery with the finger arrested it, until lights being procured from the ambulance, the handkerchief which had slipped a little was readjusted. His calmness amidst the dangers which surrounded him, and at the supposed presence of death, and his uniform politeness, which did not forsake him, even under these most trying circumstances, were remarkable. His complete control, too, over his mind, en-

feebled as it was by loss of blood, pain, etc., was wonderful. His suffering at this time was intense; his hands were cold, his skin clammy, his face pale, and his lips compressed and bloodless; not a groan escaped him, not a sign of suffering, except the slight corrugation of his brow, the fixed, rigid face, and the thin lips so tightly compressed that the impression of the teeth could be seen through them. Except these, he controlled, by his iron will, all evidence of emotion, and more difficult than this even, he controlled that disposition to restlessness, which many of us have observed upon the field of battle, attending great loss of blood. Some whiskey and morphia were procured from Dr. Straith and administered to him, and placing him in the ambulance, it was started for the corps field infirmary, at the Wilderness Tavern. Colonel Crutchfield, his chief of artillery, was also in the ambulance. He had been wounded very seriously in the leg, and was suffering intensely.

The General expressed very feelingly his sympathy for Crutchfield, and once, when the latter groaned aloud, he directed the ambulance to stop, and requested me to see if something could not be done for his relief. Torches had been provided, and every means taken to carry them to the hospital as safely and as easily as possible. I sat in the front of the ambulance, with my finger resting upon the artery, above the wound, to arrest bleeding if it should occur. When I was recognized by acquaintances and asked who was wounded, the General

would tell me to say, "A Confederate officer." At one time he put his right hand upon my head, and pulling me down to him asked "if Crutchfield was dangerously wounded?" When I answered, "No, only painfully hurt," he replied, "I am glad it is no worse." In a few moments after Crutchfield did the same thing, and when he was told that the General was very seriously wounded he groaned and cried out, "Oh, my God." It was for this that the General directed the ambulance to be halted, and requested that something should be done for Crutchfield's relief.

After reaching the hospital, he was placed in bed, covered with blankets, and another drink of whiskey and water given him. Two hours and a half elapsed before sufficient reaction took place to warrant an examination. At two o'clock Sunday morning, Surgeons Black, Walls, and Coleman being present, I informed him that chloroform would be given him and his wounds examined. I told him that amputation would probably be required, and asked if it was found necessary whether it should be done at once. He replied promptly, "Yes, certainly; Dr. McGuire, do for me whatever you think best." Chloroform was then administered, and as he began to feel its effects, and its relief to the pain he was suffering, he exclaimed, "What an infinite blessing," and continued to repeat the word "blessing" until he became insensible. The round ball (such as is used for the smooth-bore Springfield musket), which had lodged under the skin, upon the back of his

right hand, was extracted first. It had entered the palm, about the middle of the hand, and had fractured two of the bones. The left arm was then amputated, about two inches below the shoulder, very rapidly, and with slight loss of blood, the ordinary circular operation having been made. There were two wounds in this arm; the first and most serious was about three inches below the shoulder-joint, the ball dividing the main artery and fracturing the bone. The second was several inches in length; a ball having entered the outside of the fore arm, an inch below the elbow, came out upon the opposite side, just above the wrist. Throughout the whole of the operation, and until all the dressings were applied, he continued insensible. Two or three slight wounds of the skin on his face, received from the branches of trees when his horse dashed through the woods, were dressed simply with isinglass-plaster. About half-past three o'clock Colonel (then Major) Pendleton, the assistant adjutant-general, arrived at the hospital, and asked to see the General. He stated that General Hill had been wounded, and that the troops were in great disorder. General Stuart was in command, and had sent him to see the General. At first I declined to permit an interview, but the colonel urged that the safety of the army and success of the cause depended upon his seeing him. When he entered the tent the General said, "Well, Major, I am glad to see you; I thought you were killed." Pendleton briefly explained the condition of affairs, gave

Stuart's message, and asked what should be done. General Jackson was at once interested, and asked in his quick, rapid way several questions. When they were answered he remained silent a moment, evidently trying to think, contracted his brow, set his mouth, and for some moments was obviously endeavoring to concentrate his thoughts. For a moment it was believed he had succeeded, for his nostrils dilated, and his eyes flashed its old fire, but it was only for a moment; his face relaxed again, and presently he answered very feebly and sadly, "I don't know; I can't tell; say to General Stuart he must do what he thinks best." Soon after this he slept for several hours and seemed to be doing well. The next morning he was free from pain, and expressed himself sanguine of recovery. He sent his aide-de-camp, Morrison, to inform his wife of his injuries, and to bring her at once to see him. The following note from General Lee was read to him that morning by Captain Smith: "I have just received your note, informing me that you were wounded. I cannot express my regret at the occurrence. Could I have directed events, I should have chosen, for the good of the country, to have been disabled in your stead. I congratulate you upon the victory which is due to your skill and energy." He replied, "General Lee should give the praise to God." About ten o'clock his right side began to pain him so much that he asked me to examine it. He said he had injured it in falling from the litter the night before, and believed that he

had struck it against a stone or the stump of a sapling. No evidence of injury could be discovered by examination; the skin was not broken or bruised, and the lung performed, as far as I could tell, its proper functions. Some simple application was recommended, in the belief that the pain would soon disappear. At this time the battle was raging fearfully, and the sound of the cannon and musketry could be distinctly heard at the hospital. The General's attention was attracted to it from the first, and when the noise was at its height, and indicated how fiercely the conflict was being carried on, he directed all of his attendants except Captain Smith to return to the battle-field, and attend to their different duties. By eight o'clock Sunday night the pain in his side had disappeared, and in all respects he seemed to be doing well. He inquired minutely about the battle, and the different troops engaged, and his face would light up with enthusiasm and interest when told how this brigade acted, or that officer displayed conspicuous courage, and his head gave the peculiar shake from side to side, and he uttered his usual, "Good, good," with unwonted energy when the gallant behavior of the "Stonewall Brigade" was alluded to. He said, "The men of that brigade will be, some day, proud to say to their children, 'I was one of the Stonewall Brigade.'" He disclaimed any right of his own to the name Stonewall. "It belongs to the brigade and not to me." This night he slept well, and was free from pain. A message was received from General Lee

the next morning directing me to remove the General to Guinea Station as soon as his condition would justify it, as there was some danger of capture by the Federals, who were threatening to cross at Ely's Ford. In the meantime, to protect the hospital, some troops were sent to this point. The General objected to being moved if, in my opinion, it would do him any injury. He said he had no objection to staying in a tent, and would prefer it if his wife, when she came, could find lodging in a neighboring house; "and if the enemy does come," he added, "I am not afraid of them; I have always been kind to their wounded, and I am sure they will be kind to me." General Lee sent word again late that evening that he must be moved if possible, and preparations were made to leave the next morning. I was directed to accompany, and remain with him, and my duties with the corps as medical director were turned over to the surgeon next in rank.

General Jackson had previously declined to permit me to go with him to Guinea's, because complaints had so frequently been made of general officers, when wounded, carrying off with them the surgeons belonging to their command. When informed of this order of the commanding general, he said, "General Lee has always been very kind to me, and I thank him." Very early Tuesday morning he was placed in an ambulance and started for Guinea's Station; at about eight o'clock that evening he arrived at the Chandler House, where he remained till he died. Captain Hotchkiss, with a party of

engineers, was sent in front to clear the road of wood, stones, etc., and to order the wagons out of the track to let the ambulance pass. The rough teamsters sometimes refused to move their loaded wagons out of the way for an ambulance until told that it contained Jackson, and then, with all possible speed, they gave the way, and stood with hats off, and weeping, as he went by. At Spottsylvania Court-house, and along the whole route, men and women rushed to the ambulance, bringing all the poor delicacies they had, and with tearful eyes they blessed him, and prayed for his recovery. He bore the journey well, and was cheerful throughout the day. He talked freely about the late battle, and among other things said that he had intended to endeavor to cut the Federals off from the United States Ford, and taking a position between them and the river, oblige them to attack him; and he added with a smile, "My men sometimes fail to drive the enemy from a position, but they always fail to drive us away." He spoke of Rodes, and alluded in high terms to his magnificent behavior on the field Saturday evening. He hoped he would be promoted. He thought promotions for gallantry should be made at once, upon the field, and not delayed; made very early, or upon field, they would be the greatest incentives to gallantry in others. He spoke of Colonel Willis, who commanded the skirmishers of Rodes' division, and praised him very highly, and referred to the death of Paxton and Boswell very feelingly. He alluded to them as

officers of great merit and promise. The day was quite warm, and at one time he suffered with slight nausea. At his suggestion I placed over his stomach a wet towel and he expressed great relief from it. After he arrived at Chandler's house, he ate some bread and tea with evident relish, and slept well throughout the entire night. Wednesday he was thought to be doing remarkably well. He ate heartily for one in his condition, and was uniformly cheerful. I found his wounds to be doing very well to-day. Union by the first intention had taken place, to some extent, in the stump, and the rest of the surface of the wound exposed was covered with healthy granulations. The wound in his hand gave him little pain, and the discharge was healthy. Simple lime and water dressings were used both for the stump and hand, and upon the palm of the latter a light, short splint was applied, to assist in keeping at rest the fragments of the second and third metacarpal bones. He expressed great satisfaction when told that the wounds were healing, and asked if I could tell from their appearance how long he would probably be kept from the field. Conversing with Captain Smith a few moments afterwards, he alluded to his injuries, and said, "Many would regard them as a great misfortune. I regard them as one of the blessings of my life." Captain S——replied, "All things work together for good to those who love God." "Yes," he answered, "that's it, that's it." At my request Dr. Morrison came to-day, and remained with him.

About one o'clock Thursday morning while I was asleep upon a lounge in his room, he directed his servant, Jim, to apply a wet towel to his stomach to relieve an attack of nausea, with which he was again troubled. The servant asked permission to first consult me, but the General, knowing that I had slept none for nearly three nights, refused to allow the servant to disturb me, and demanded the towel. About daylight I was aroused and found him suffering great pain. An examination disclosed pleuropneumonia of the right side. I believed, and the consulting physicians concurred in the opinion, that it was attributable to the fall from the litter the night he was wounded. The General himself referred it to this accident. I think the disease came on too soon after the application of the wet cloths to admit of the supposition once believed that it was induced by them. The nausea, for which the cloths were applied that night, may have been the result of inflammation already begun. Contusion of the lung, with extravasation of blood in his chest, was probably produced by the fall referred to, and shock and loss of blood prevented any ill effects until reaction had been well established, and then inflammation ensued. Cups were applied and mercury, with antimony and opium administered. Towards the evening he became better, and hopes were again entertained of his recovery. Mrs. Jackson arrived to-day, and nursed him faithfully to the end. She was a devoted wife, an earnest Christian, and endeared us all to her by her great kindness and gentleness. The General's

joy at the presence of his wife and child was very great, and for him unusually demonstrative. Noticing the sadness of his wife, he said to her tenderly, "I know you would gladly give your life for me, but I am perfectly resigned. Do not be sad ; I hope that I may yet recover. Pray for me, but always remember in your prayers to use the petition, ' Thy will be done.' " Friday his wounds were again dressed, and although the quantity of discharge from them had diminished, the process of healing was still going on. The pain in his side had disappeared, but he breathed with difficulty, and complained of a feeling of great exhaustion. When Dr. Breckinridge (who with Dr. Smith had been sent for in consultation) said he hoped that a blister which had been applied would afford him relief, he expressed his own confidence in it, and in his final recovery. Dr. Tucker, from Richmond, arrived on Saturday, and all that human skill could devise was done to stay the hand of death. He suffered no pain to-day, and his breathing was less difficult, but he was evidently hourly growing weaker. When his child was brought to him to-day, he played with it for some time, frequently caressing it, and calling it "his little comforter." At one time he raised his wounded hand above its head, and closing his eyes, was for some moments silently engaged in prayer. He said to me, "I see from the number of physicians that you think my condition dangerous, but I thank God, if it is His will, that I am ready to go." About daylight on Sunday morning Mrs. Jackson informed

him that his recovery was very doubtful, and that it was better that he should be prepared for the worst. He was silent for a moment, and then said, "It will be infinite gain to be translated to heaven." He advised his wife, in the event of his death, to return to her father's house, and added, "You have a kind and good father, but there is no one so good and kind as your heavenly Father." He still expressed a hope of his recovery, but requested her, if he should die, to have him buried in Lexington, in the valley of Virginia. His exhaustion increased so rapidly that at eleven o'clock Mrs. Jackson knelt by his bed and told him that before the sun went down he would be with his Saviour. He replied, "Oh, no! You are frightened, my child; death is not so near; I may yet get well." She fell over upon the bed, weeping bitterly, and told him again that the physicians said that there was no hope. After a moment's pause he asked her to call me. "Doctor, Anna informs me that you have told her that I am to die to-day; is it so?" When he was answered, he turned his eyes towards the ceiling, and gazed for a moment or two as if in intense thought, then replied, "Very good, very good; it is all right." He then tried to comfort his almost heart-broken wife, and told her he had a good deal to say to her, but he was too weak. Colonel Pendleton came into the room about one o'clock, and he asked him, "Who was preaching at headquarters to-day?" When told that the whole army was praying for him, he replied, "Thank God; they are very kind." He said, "It

is the Lord's day; my wish is fulfilled. I have always desired to die on Sunday."

His mind now began to fail and wander, and he frequently talked as if in command upon the field, giving orders in his old way; then the scene shifted, and he was at the mess table, in conversation with members of his staff; now with his wife and child; now at prayers with his military family. Occasional intervals of return of his mind would appear, and during one of them I offered him some brandy and water; but he declined it, saying, "It will only delay my departure and do no good; I want to preserve my mind, if possible, to the last." About half-past one he was told that he had but two hours to live, and he answered again, feebly, but firmly, "Very good; it is all right." A few moments before he died he cried out in his delirium, "Order A. P. Hill to prepare for action! Pass the infantry to the front rapidly; tell Major Hawks——" then stopped, leaving the sentence unfinished. Presently a smile of ineffable sweetness spread itself over his pale face, and he said quietly, and with an expression as if of relief, "Let us cross over the river and rest under the shade of the trees;" and then without pain, or the least struggle, his spirit passed from earth to the God who gave it.

Dr. Dabney, writing of the death-bed scene and the last words uttered, says, "His attendants, now believing that consciousness had finally departed, ceased to restrain his wife, and she was permitted to

abandon herself to all the desolation of her grief. But they were mistaken. Bowing down over him, her eyes raining tears upon his dying face, and covering it with kisses, she cried, 'Oh, doctor, cannot you do something more?' That voice had power to recall him once more, for a moment, from the threshold of heaven's gate; he opened his eyes fully, and gazing upward at her face, with a long look of full intelligence and love, closed them again forever."

"General Jackson's remains were shrouded by his staff, Sunday evening, in his military garments, including his military overcoat. The governor of Virginia sent a deputation of eminent civilians and military men to escort the remains to Richmond, which on Monday morning were conveyed to the capital by a special train, attended by the General's staff, his widow and her female friends, and the Governor's Committee. Business had been suspended, and the whole city came forth to meet the dead. Amidst a solemn silence, only broken by the minute guns and a military dirge, the remains were borne into the governor's gates. The next day, at the appointed hour, the hearse containing the remains, preceded by two regiments of General Pickett's division, with arms reversed, that general and his staff, the Fayette Artillery and Wren's Cavalry, the horse of the dead soldier, caparisoned for battle, and led by a groom, his staff officers, members of the 'Stonewall Brigade,' invalids and wounded; and then a vast array of officials, headed by the President and members of his cabinet, followed by all the



JULIA, DAUGHTER OF "STONEWALL" JACKSON, AS A CHILD, AND WHEN GROWN.

general officers in Richmond, civic dignitaries and citizens. The procession moved through the main streets and then returned to the Capitol. Places of business were closed, and every avenue thronged with tearful spectators. . . . When the hearse reached the Capitol, the pall-bearers, headed by General Longstreet, bore the coffin into the hall of the lower house of Congress where it was placed upon a species of altar, the coffin enfolded in the Confederate flag. There the head was uncovered, and the people were permitted to enter and view the features of the dead . . . until some twenty thousand persons had paid this last tribute of affection. . . . No ceremonial could be so honorable to him as the tears which were dropped around his corpse by almost every eye, and the order and solemn quiet in which the vast crowds assembled and dispersed. No such homage was ever paid to an American. On Wednesday the remains, followed by the widow and the General's staff, were carried by way of Gordonsville to Lynchburg. At every station the people were assembled in crowds, with offerings of flowers. At Lynchburg the scenes of Richmond were repeated, and the remains then placed upon a barge in the canal to be conveyed to Lexington. They reached that village Thursday evening, and were borne by the cadets to the Military Institute where they were laid in the lecture room, which Jackson had occupied as professor, and guarded during the night by his former pupils. Friday, the 15th of May, they were brought forth to the

church where he had so much delighted to worship, and committed to his venerable and weeping pastor, Dr. White."

The following is an extract from the diary of Mrs. Margaret Junkin Preston, written after the news of Jackson's death reached Lexington. The entry is under the date of May 12, 1863 :

"At five this evening the startling confirmation comes, Jackson is indeed dead ! My heart overflows with sorrow. The grief in this community is intense ; everybody is in tears. . . . Never have I known a holier man. Never have I seen a human being as thoroughly governed by duty. He lived only to please God ; his daily life was a daily offering up of himself. In his last letter to me he spoke of our precious Ellie, and of the blessedness of being with her in heaven." ¹

And then from the same diary the following account of Jackson's burial :

"May 15th, Friday ; General Jackson was buried to-day, amid the flowing tears of a vast concourse of people. By a strange coincidence, two cavalry companies happened to be passing through Lexington from the west just at the hour of the ceremonies ; they stopped, procured mourning for their colors, and joined the procession. . . . The exercises were very appropriate ; a touching voluntary was sung with subdued, sobbing voices ; a prayer from Dr. Ramsay of most melting tenderness ; very true and discriminating remarks from Dr. White, and a

¹ "Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters."

beautiful prayer from W. F. J——. The coffin was draped in the *first* Confederate flag ever made, and presented by President Davis to Mrs. Jackson; it was wrapped around the coffin, and on it were laid multitudes of wreaths and flowers which had been piled upon it all along the sad journey to Richmond and thence to Lexington. The grave too was heaped with flowers. And now it is all over, and the hero is left 'alone in his glory.' Not many better men have lived and died. . . . Sincerer mourning was never manifested for any one, I do think."

In conclusion it may not seem inappropriate to allude to the sentiment felt for General Jackson, and the esteem which was entertained for him by some among his opponents in the Civil War. Upon the occasion of what is known as the Hunter Raid to Lynchburg, Virginia, little more than a year subsequent to Jackson's death, when the Federal troops had penetrated as far as Lexington, where Jackson's remains had been interred, Colonel J. M. Schoonmaker, commanding the Eighth Pennsylvania Cavalry Regiment, formed his command in line at Jackson's grave and fired a salute to his memory.¹

¹ This incident was related to the writer by Colonel Schoonmaker several years ago. It is a pleasure to be able to state that this gentleman is still living, at his home, in Pittsburgh, being vice-president of the P. and L. E. R. R. It should be further stated in this connection, to the credit of this worthy gentleman, who is not only an honor to his state, but to the army in which he served, that at the time of this raid, and while at this same town of Lexington, he was ordered by the commanding general, a native of Virginia, to set fire to and burn the Virginia Military Institute;

In the *Press* of date May 18, 1863, the following item appeared :

"On Saturday the military authorities arrested Colonel Charles S. K. Sumwalt, of the 138th Pennsylvania Infantry, on the charge of disloyalty. He is charged with having worn a crape in the button-hole of his coat out of respect to the memory of the late Major (Lieutenant) General Jackson of the Confederate army. He is held for examination."

It may be stated that Colonel Sumwalt was a few days later released on his parole, on condition that he would not visit his regiment and that he would in all things conduct himself as a loyal citizen of the United States.

Upon the occasion of the capture of Harper's Ferry by Jackson's forces when there were more than twelve thousand prisoners surrendered by the Federal officer in command, it has been authoritatively stated that the whole line of prisoners, as Jackson passed along, cheered him loudly.¹

that he positively refused to carry out the order, assigning as a reason that he had not enlisted in the army for that purpose. He, in consequence of such refusal, was placed under arrest for disobeying orders, but was subsequently honorably acquitted. It may be further noted that within recent date Colonel Schoonmaker has had conferred upon him honorary membership in the alumni of the Virginia Military Institute, the buildings of which he had refused to burn.—T. J. A.

¹ This well authenticated incident is related by General D. H. Hill in an article on General Jackson published in *The Century Magazine* of February, 1894.

Note

Mrs. Jackson joins her husband : It seems a singular coincidence that while the last page of my tribute to General Jackson was being finished, and the stenographer was transcribing his death-bed scene as described by Dr. McGuire, a telegram was brought to the door conveying the intelligence of the death of Mrs. Jackson the morning of that day, March 24, 1915, at her home in Charlotte, N. C. Her lovely character endeared all persons to her. As an instance of her thoughtfulness of others it may be mentioned that her last words were, "When we go to Lexington (for her burial) be sure the children are left in safe hands," referring to her two infant great-grandchildren. Mrs. Jackson had visited at my home in West Virginia some two and a half years before, and while there, learning of the data that I had been for years collecting relative to her husband, strongly urged my preparation of it for publication, and from that time encouraged and was deeply interested in its completion. Upon returning to her home from the visit mentioned, she forwarded to me a number of photographs, including a daguerreotype of General Jackson, taken immediately following his return from the Mexican War, for illustrations in this volume.—T. J. A.

In the preparation of this volume the following publications, among others, have been consulted, and in some instances quoted from :

Life and Campaigns of Lieutenant-General Thomas J. Jackson.
Prof. R. L. Dabney, D. D.

Life of General Thomas J. Jackson. By his wife, Mary Anna Jackson.

Stonewall Jackson and The American Civil War. Lieutenant-Colonel G. F. R. Henderson.

Life of Thomas J. Jackson. James Dabney McCabe.

The Life of Stonewall Jackson. By a Virginian.

Stonewall Jackson. John Esten Cook.

Stonewall Jackson. Henry Alexander White.

The Life of General Thomas J. Jackson. Sarah Nicholas Randolph.

Stonewall Jackson. Markenfield Addey.

Stonewall Jackson. Charles Hallock.

Story of Stonewall Jackson. William Chase.

Life of Stonewall Jackson. Michael Doolady.

Jackson's Valley Campaign. Colonel William Allan.

Jackson's Campaigns, etc. Thomas Miller Maguire, M. A.,
LL. D., F. R. H. S.

Stonewall Jackson. Carl Hovey.

Margaret Junkin Preston, Life and Letters. Mrs. Elizabeth Preston Allan.

The Century Magazine.

"The Monongahela of Old." James Veech.

"Reminiscences of West Point in the Olden Time," etc.

History of Harrison County, West Virginia. Haymond.

History of Randolph County, West Virginia. Maxwell.

The Confederate Cause and Conduct in the War Between the States. Hunter McGuire, M. D., LL. D., late Medical Director Jackson's Corps, A. N. V., and Hon. Geo. L. Christian.

Personal Recollections of Stonewall Jackson. Major John G. Gittings.

Discourses on the Life and Character of Lieutenant-General Thomas J. Jackson. General Francis H. Smith, A. M.

Scott's Memoirs.

The Several Standard Encyclopædias.

Index

- ADAMS & Co., 147
 Adjutant-General (Dabney), 24, 52
 Aix La Chapelle, 248
 Albert, slave, 338, 339
 Alburtis, Captain, 85
 Aldie, Va., 47
 Alhambra, Granada, 253
 Allan, Mrs. Elizabeth Preston, 315,
 336, 338
 Alleghany Mountain, 40
 Alleman, Don Lucas, 136
 Allen, Judge John J., 196
 Allen, Mrs. John J., 42, 196
 Almeda, 136
 Alps, 248
 Alum Springs, 179, 186-7, 190-1,
 196
 America, 251, 343
 American army, 87, 94-7, 99, 100-
 3, 105, 109, 112-13, 119, 124,
 128
 Amphidia, General, 110
 Amy and Emma, slaves, 337
 Ancient Jewish Priests, 272
 Anderson, Miss Anna, 234
 Antwerp, 248-9
 Appletons, 149, 150
 Archbishop's carriage, 138
 Argonauts of '49, 32
 Arkansas, 244
 Arnold, Anna Grace, 159, 161,
 181, 184-5, 194, 205, 208, 262-
 5, 275, 279-80, 296, 299, 300-7,
 331
 Arnold, Captain, 147
 Arnold, Grace, 201
 Arnold, Jonathan (brother-in-law
 of General T. J. Jackson), 38,
 42, 68, 73, 85, 92, 128, 132,
 135, 139, 143-9, 150-1, 157-8,
 160-1, 163-5, 169, 170, 172,
 178, 181-2, 184-5, 187, 193,
 200, 206-8, 212, 222, 224, 232-
 6, 244-5, 248, 262-3, 268, 273-7,
 279-80, 287, 293, 299, 302-5
 Arnold, Mrs. Laura A. (sister of
 General T. J. Jackson), 68-72,
 74, 78-9, 83, 87, 91-2, 119, 125,
 128, 130-1, 135, 137, 140, 142-
 4, 146, 148-51, 153-4, 157-8,
 160-4, 167-8, 170, 172-3, 178-
 9, 181-3, 186-7, 190-4, 197,
 199, 201, 203-6, 208, 210-12,
 217, 219-22, 224-6, 228-9, 231-
 2, 235, 237-8, 242-3, 246, 249-
 50, 252, 254, 256-7, 260-2, 264-
 9, 273-5, 277-82, 284-9, 291,
 294-5, 299, 302-5
 Arnold, Stark W., 191, 203, 264,
 275, 299, 300, 302-4, 306
 Arnold, Thomas J., 30, 34, 41-2,
 46, 52, 92, 113, 126, 129, 135,
 139, 162, 166, 169, 173, 179, 181,
 183-6, 191, 193-4, 203, 205,
 212, 216, 221-4, 227, 236-7,
 239-40, 243, 245, 250, 259, 261-
 4, 266-9, 275, 279, 292-5, 298,
 300-3, 315-16, 336, 338, 364-5
 Arnold, Wm. E., 277
 Artillery, 78-9, 81, 95, 113, 115,
 272
 Asbury, Bishop, 44
 Auditor of Virginia, 52
 Ayotla, 97-8, 121
 BADEN BADEN, 248
 Baldwin, Mr. O. P., 250
 Baltimore, 158, 217, 265, 282-3,
 285
 Baltimore *Sun*, 344
 Baptist Church, Brad Run, 66
 Barclay, Mr. J. W., 316
 Basle, 248
 Bassel, Benjamin, 277

- Bath Alum Springs, 179
 Beauregard, P. G. T. (General, C. S. A.), 97, 101, 122
 Beaver Creek Bridge, 179
 Bee, Barnard E. (General, C. S. A.), 110-11, 122, 334
 Belen gate, 112
 Belgium, 248
 Belleville, 32
 Bennett, Hon. J. M., 52, 277, 332-3
 Berne, 248
 Beverley, (W.) Va., 65, 78, 81, 92, 141-3, 145, 154, 158, 166, 170, 178, 181, 183, 185, 187-9, 205, 212, 218, 221-2, 228, 233-7, 241, 243-4, 252-3, 256, 268-9, 275, 281, 289, 291, 296, 307, 331
 Black, Dr., 349
 Bledsoe, Mr., 217
 Blowing Cave, 179
 Board of Visitors, V. M. I., 171, 173-4, 202
 Bonn, 248
 Boswell, Captain, 354
 Bosworth, Mr. J. B., 301
 Bosworth, Dr., Squire, 203, 212, 226, 239, 243, 299
 Bragg, Braxton (General, C. S. A.), 85
 Brake, Mr. A. (uncle by marriage of General T. J. Jackson), 28-30
 Brake, William, 30, 299
 Brannon, Hon. Henry, 59
 Brattleboro, Vt., 282, 284
 Breckinridge, Dr., 357
 Brien, 248
 Britons, 303
 Britton, Forbes, 70
 Brockenbrough, Judge John W., 192, 198, 316-17
 Brown, John, raid, 215, 293
 Brussels, 248-9
 Buchanan, Va., 183
 Buckhannon River, (W.) Va., 40
 Buckhaunon, 39, 40, 44
 Buena Vista, Battle of, 82, 84, 90, 95, 102
 Buffalo, 40
 CADWALLADER, GENERAL, 100-1, 110
 Calais, 249
 California, 32-3, 53, 57-60, 79, 148, 152, 162, 176, 187, 198, 210, 220-1, 243, 252
 California gold excitement, 57-8
 Camargo, 82-3
 Campbell, Mr., 134
 Camp Lee, Richmond, 331
 Camp Stevens, (W.) Va., 333
 Canada, 161
 Capitol, Richmond, Va., 360
 Carey, Mr. Wilson Miles, 217
 Carlisle Barracks, 142, 157
 Carlisle, Hon. John S., 144, 158, 170-2
 Carnochan, Dr., 265
 Casey, Captain, 110
 Cataract House, 206
 Cathedral of Chester, 253, 303
 Catholic ecclesiastics and Church, 126-8
 Cecil County, Md., 39
 Centreville, 336
 Cerro Gordo, 86, 89, 121
 Chair of Mathematics, 214
 Chancellorsville, 117, 345
 Chandler House, 353, 355
 Chaplains, 340-1
 Chapultepec, Castle of, 105-11, 113-19, 122-3, 130, 176, 311
 Charles I., 251
 Charlestown, 215, 276
 Charlotte, N. C., 365
 Chenoweth, Major Joseph H., 261, 276, 285, 304, 308
 Chester, England, 249-50, 253, 303
 Chihuahua, 138
 Childs, Colonel, 91
 Cholera, 147, 152
 Christian, Colonel George L., 345
 Churubusco, 102, 104, 113, 118, 122
 Civil War, 24, 42, 52, 56, 76, 111, 122-3, 168, 173, 214-15, 232, 236, 240, 244, 312, 342, 344, 363
 Clarksburg, 25-9, 38-9, 44, 47, 53, 70, 143, 154, 192, 228, 242, 244, 257
 Clay, Henry, 159

- Cobb, Mr. Irvin S., 343
 Coleman, Dr., 349
 Collector U. S. Excise Tax, 26
 Collett, Rev. Thomas, 175
 Confederacy, Southern, 313
 Confederate army, 61, 111
 Confederate flag, 363
 Confederate Government, 333-4
 Confederate Museum, Richmond,
 201
 Congress, 40-2, 144, 171
 Congressional Directory, 41
 Connecticut River, 285
 Conrad, Peter, 145, 146
 Constable, 35, 52
 Constitution of the U. S., 41, 294
 Contreras, 99-101, 104, 113-14,
 118, 121, 123, 138
 Convention, Virginia State, 41, 77,
 171-2, 293
 Convicts, Mexican, 112
 Couch, General, 61
 Court, Lewis County, (W.) Va.,
 35
 Courtenay, Professor, 214
 Courts Martial, 142, 157, 161, 163,
 165, 167
 Cowen, Mr., 178
 Criss, Mr. and Mrs. Aaron, 242-4
 Cromwell, Oliver, 249, 322
 Crown Point, 161
 Crutchfield, Colonel, 348-9
 Cuba, 135
 Cumberland, 147, 149

DABNEY, REV. DR. (Major C. S. A.)
 24, 29, 30, 53-4, 56, 58, 67,
 76, 95, 114-15, 117, 124, 127,
 218, 309, 313, 319, 321, 323,
 334, 338-9, 341, 359
 Davis, President Jefferson, 312-13,
 334, 363
 Democratic newspaper, 70
 Dennis, Mr., 37
 Denominational distinction, 341
 Dix, James, 234, 239
 Dorman, Hon. James B., 293
 Duel, 42
 Duncan, Captain, 85, 137
 Duncan, Mrs. Floride, 257

EARLY, JUBAL A. (General, C. S. A.), 122
 Early settlements, 48
 Eaton Hall, 249
 Edinburgh, 248-9
 Elhart, Captain A., 329
 El Peñon, 97-8, 121
 Ely's Ford, 353
 "Encerro," 138
 England, 39, 134, 249, 302-3
 English army, 45
 English grammar, 66, 237, 239,
 245, 266, 268, 280
 Ewell, R. S. (General, C. S. A.),
 122
 Europe, 246-8

FAIRFAX family, 251
 Fauquier County, Va., 73
 Fayette artillery, 360
 Fayette County, (W.) Va., 27, 229,
 240
 Federal army, 61, 117, 173, 236,
 353
 First Brigade of the Army of the
 Shenandoah, 333
 Fishburn, Mrs. Julia Junkin, 226
 Florence, 248
 Florida, 166, 169-70, 172, 176
 Fort Clinton, N. Y., 165
 Fort Columbus, N. Y., 80
 Fort Hamilton, N. Y., 57, 59, 80,
 144, 146, 148, 150-1, 153-4,
 160-2, 166-7
 Fort Meade, Fla., 77, 166-8, 172-4
 Fort Monroe, Va., 147
 Fort Ontario, N. Y., 163-4
 Fort Putnam, N. Y., 165, 205
 Fort Ticonderoga, N. Y., 163
 Fort Washington, 160
 Foster, General, 61
 Frankfort on the Main, 248
 Franklin, Benjamin, 46
 Fredericksburg, 330, 343
 Freiburg, 248
 French language, 61-2
 Furlough, 65

GARNETT, R. S., 334
 Geneva, 248

- Genoa, 249
 Gettysburg, Battle of, 345
 Gibbon, John (General, U. S. A.),
 61, 119
 Gibson, Mr., 147
 Gittings, John, 192
 Glades, The, 265
 Glasgow, 248-9
 Goat's Island, 206
 Goff, Colonel David, 172, 288
 Gordonsville, 361
 Goshen Station, 282
 Governor's Island, 140
 Graduation, 74
 Grafton, 285
 Graham, Dr., 257
 Guanojuato, 132
 Guinea Station, 353
- HAAAS, MR. I. C., 197
 Hadden, David, 43-4, 50-1
 Hadden, John, 43
 Hadden, Margaret (later Mrs.
 Isaac White), 44, 148, 172, 183
 Hadden, Mary (later Mrs. Edward
 Jackson, and grandmother of
 General T. J. Jackson), 43
 Hadden, William, 45
 Hampden Sidney, Va., 274-50
 Harper & Brothers, 149-50
 Harper's Ferry, 215, 277, 317,
 331-2, 342, 364
 Harrison, Mr. Charles, 192
 Harrison County, (W.) Va., 26, 36,
 45, 47, 171
 Harrison, Judge William A., 192
 Hawks, Major, 359
 Hayes, Hon. Samuel L., 52-3, 158,
 169-70, 202
 Haymond, Henry, 26, 42
 Healing Springs, Va., 257
 Heidelberg, 248
 Henderson, Mr., 178
 Henderson, Mrs. G. F. R., 343
 Henderson, Lt. Colonel G. F. R.,
 49, 67, 76, 106, 109, 114, 118-19,
 126, 343
 Herbert, Lt. Colonel, 115
 Heredity, 50
 Herrara, President of Mexico, 92
- Hews, Colonel, 138
 Hill, D. H. (General, C. S. A.),
 82, 94, 110-11, 113, 122, 196,
 364
 Hill, A. P. (General, C. S. A.),
 61, 122, 320, 350, 359
 Hille, Mrs. Nancy, 205, 209, 227,
 233
 Hoffman, Colonel John S. (C. S.
 A.), 277
 Hooker, Joe (General, U. S. A.),
 117, 122
 Hot Springs, Va., 144-6
 Hotchkiss, Captain Jed. (C. S. A.),
 353
 Hudson River, 144
 Hugger, General (C. S. A.), 122
 Humboldt's History of Mexico, 138
 Hunter Raid, 363
- ILLINOIS, 233, 244
 Indiana, 231-2
 Indians, 41, 44-5, 170, 174
 Iowa, 244
 Ireland, 39, 40, 45
 Italy, 248, 256
- JACKSON, Ancestry, 38
 Jackson, General Andrew, 39, 172
 Jackson, Mrs. Anna Morrison, sec-
 ond wife of General T. J. Jack-
 son, 24, 119, 256-63, 265-6,
 268-9, 273-7, 279, 281, 283-8,
 290, 292, 294, 304, 306-8, 331,
 351, 356-60, 363; death of, 365
 Jackson, Cummins E. (uncle of
 General T. J. Jackson), 29, 31,
 34-6, 52-3, 55-60, 64-5, 78-80,
 136, 158, 162, 176, 186-7, 278
 Jackson, Edward (grandfather of
 General T. J. Jackson), 29, 41,
 43, 45
 Jackson, Edward (uncle of Gen-
 eral T. J. Jackson), 136
 Jackson, Mrs. Edward (step-grand-
 mother of General T. J. Jack-
 son), 27, 29
 Jackson, Dr. Edward B., 42, 277
 Jackson, Mrs. Eleanor Junkin (first

- wife of General T. J. Jackson), 205-6, 211-12, 217-21, 224-7, 234, 247, 315, 362
- Jackson, Edward J., 187
- Jackson, Dr., 256
- Jackson, Elizabeth (deceased sister of General T. J. Jackson), 25, 131, 149, 234, 239, 242
- Jackson, Elizabeth Cummins (wife of John Jackson and great-grandmother of General T. J. Jackson), 38-9, 41, 50
- Jackson, Colonel George (grand-uncle of General T. J. Jackson), 38-42
- Jackson, Captain George W., 38
- Jackson, Judge James Monroe, 43
- Jackson, Jonathan (father of General T. J. Jackson), 25-6, 36, 38, 47, 131, 149, 201, 205, 234, 239, 242, 306
- Jackson, Governor Jacob B., 43
- Jackson, John (paternal great-grandfather of General T. J. Jackson), 38-41, 43, 50
- Jackson, J. C., 38
- Jackson, Judge John G., 26, 29, 30, 40-2
- Jackson, Mrs. Judge John G., 29
- Jackson, General John Jay, 172
- Jackson, Judge John J., Jr., 43
- Jackson, Julia (daughter of General T. J. Jackson), 357
- Jackson, Mrs. Julia Beckwith Neale (wife of Jonathan Jackson, mother of General T. J. Jackson), 46, 50, 56-7, 131, 149, 201, 239-40, 258, 306
- Jackson, Laura Ann (sister of General T. J. Jackson and later Mrs. Jonathan Arnold), 27-8, 31-2, 34, 37, 57, 59, 62, 65-7
- Jackson, Mrs. Mary Hadden, paternal grandmother of General T. J. Jackson, 43, 50
- Jackson, General T. J. (Stonewall), 24-31; youthful adventure to the Mississippi River, 32-4; constable, 35-7, 38, 43, 45-7, 49-51; appointed cadet to West Point, 52-3, 55-7, 59-61; longs for his native mountains, 63; has no intention of remaining in army, 64; has many friends, 64-6; cadet officer; signature, 67-70; gives consideration to profession; arms and law and futurity; ambitious to acquire a name, 71-3; graduates at West Point, 74; assigned to the 1st Artillery Regiment; visits home; ordered to report to his company for duty; ordered to march for Mexico, 75-9; Mexico, 81-2; promoted to second and first lieutenant, 83, 87, 90; excessive ambition, 91; Spanish language, 92; applies for second lieutenantcy in Magruder's battery, 93; bearer of challenge to General Pierce, 94-5; battle of Contreras; brevetted captain, 103; Molino del Rey, 105-6; Chapultepec, 107-11, 114; effect upon when under fire, 115; named in Generals Scott's, Pillow's and Worth's Reports, 116; complimented in Magruder's Report; brevetted major of artillery, 117-18; publicly complimented by General Scott, 119, 121-2; initiative, 123-4; Spanish society in Mexico, 125; inclined to remain in Mexico, 125-7; investigating religious denominations, 128, 135, 138-40; returns from Mexico, 140-1, 143-8; thrice daily prayer, 149; society, 150, 152-3, 157-8; would not violate God's will, 159-60; admiration of flowers, 162; Cummins E. Jackson a father to him, 162; water cure, 164-7; encounter with Indians desirable, 168; doubts whether he will quit military life, 169; philosophy favorite subject, 171; elected Professor Natural and Experimental Philosophy, V. M.

- I., 172-5; incident with cadet, 176-8, 179, 181-2, 184, 186-8; Lexington most beautiful village, 190, 191-4, 196-7; would not part with Bible, 198, 199, 200, 202; marriage to Miss Junkin, 204, 206-7, 210-13; applicant for chair of Mathematics at University of Virginia, 214, 216-18; death of wife, 219, 220-1, 224-230; forecasts civil war, 231; objects to half-brother locating in free state, 232, 235-241, 243; averse to investing money in free state for fear of confiscation of property, 244; Europe, 246, 248-255; marriage to Miss Morrison, 256-7; plan of salvation, 258, 260-1; death of daughter, 262, 263-275; John Brown execution, 276, 278-86, 288, 290; opposed to secession, 291-2; expresses clearly his views as to course to be pursued by citizens of Virginia, 292-294, 295; fondness for children, 298-9, 301-4, 306-13, 315-323; estimate of as an instructor, 324, 326-330; deeply concerned about northwestern Virginia; expected to be ordered there; ordered to report at Richmond with the cadets; appointed colonel and sent to command at Harper's Ferry, 331-2; in command of a promising brigade, 333; good staff officers, 334; would willingly serve under General Garnett, 334; brigadier-general, 334; tenderness of heart, 335-6; kindness and affection for his slaves, 337-8; "the black man's friend," 338, 339-40; liberal in religious views, 340; opposed to denominational distinctions, 341-2; in command at Fredericksburg, 343; campaigns subject of study in leading military schools of Europe and America, 343; Lord Roberts' opinion of, 344; wounding and death, 345-353, 354-8, 360-5
- Jackson, Thomas K., 69
- Jackson, Warren, brother of General T. J. Jackson, 27, 31-4, 36-7, 50, 74, 79, 131, 149, 225, 234, 238-9
- Jackson, General William L., 42, 77, 171-2, 277, 279, 282, 290
- Jalapa, 86-7, 89-91, 94, 125, 129, 133, 138-9
- Jefferson, Thomas, President, 217
- Jim (black), General Jackson's servant, 336
- John Brown Raid, 215, 293
- Johnson County, Mo., 232
- Johnson, Joseph, Governor of Virginia, 36, 158
- Johnston, Edward (General, C. S. A.), 122
- Johnston, Joseph E. (General, C. S. A.), 122, 171, 329, 334
- Johnstone, Lieutenant, 100, 118
- Jones, D. R. (General, C. S. A.), 61
- Junkin, Miss Eleanor (later wife of General T. J. Jackson), 199, 203-4
- Junkin, Rev. Dr. George, 203, 252
- Junkin, Mrs. Dr. George, 209
- Junkin, Miss Maggie (later Mrs. Preston), 205, 219-20, 315
- Junkin, William, 234-5
- KANAWHA RIVER, 229
- Kansas, 233
- Kentucky, 33, 42, 217
- Kosciusko, General Thaddeus, 165
- LA HOYA, 87, 129
- Lake Champlain, 161
- Lake Lucerne, 248
- Lake Ontario, 207
- La Puebla, 87, 92, 96-7, 111-12, 134
- Lake Thum, 248
- Latin language, 221, 236, 239, 245, 266, 268, 280, 300-2
- Latrobe, Mr. J. H., 165
- La Vega, General, 89
- Las Vegas, 133-4

- Lee, Judge George H., 152, 158
 Lee, R. E. (General, C. S. A.),
 97-8, 100-1, 122, 173, 216-17,
 320, 333, 343, 351-3
 Lee, Captain R. E., Jr., 173
 Leghorn, 248
 Letcher, Governor, John, 331
 Letters, 83, 87, 91, 128, 133, 135,
 137, 158-9, 197-8, 231-2, 243-4
 Lewis County, (W.) Va., 27, 35,
 37, 45, 55, 59, 60, 65-6, 70, 136,
 143, 171, 176, 228
 Lewiston, 207
 Lexington, 59, 171, 176-9, 181-6,
 189-91, 194, 197, 199, 201, 203,
 205-6, 208, 210, 212, 219, 221-2,
 225-6, 229, 231-2, 234-5, 237-8,
 242, 249-50, 252, 254, 256-8,
 260-4, 266, 268, 270, 277-8,
 282, 284, 286, 288-9, 291, 293-5,
 298, 300-4, 306-7, 316, 335,
 338-9, 358, 361-3, 365
 "Little Pilgrim," 275
 Liverpool, 246, 248-50, 303
 Locsser, Mr., 57
 London, 39, 248-9
 Long Island, 144
 Longstreet, General James, 122,
 361
 Lord Chesterfield's Letters, 136
 Los Angeles, 37
 Loudon County, Va., 46-7
 Lowell, 134
 Lurty, George, 192, 198
 Lyle, John B., 301-2
 Lynchburg, 360, 363
 Lyons, 249

 MADISON, MRS. DOLLY, 40, 42
 Magdalena, 98
 Magruder, John B. (General, C.
 S. A.), 93-6, 99, 100, 103, 106-
 11, 114-17, 122, 131-2
 Maguire, Dr. T. Miller, 122
 Manassas, 335
 Mantua, 248
 Marcus Aurelius, 216
 Marquis of Westminster, 249, 253
 Marseilles, 249
 Marshall, John, Chief Justice, 217
 Martinez, Dr., 134
 Martinsburg, 333
 Maryland, 39, 333
 Massie, Professor, 206
 Matamoras, 82-3
 Maury, Commodore, 290
 Maury, Dabney H. (General, C.
 S. A.), 61, 75
 Maxwell, Hu, 45
 May, Captain, 85
 McCabe, James Dabney, 175
 McCalley, Dr. James, 25, 158
 McClellan, George B. (General,
 U. S. A.), 61, 97, 122, 173
 McCutcheon, John T., 343
 McCutcheon, R. A., 280
 McDowell, Battle of, 316
 McDowell, General (U. S. A.), 122
 McDowell, Governor, 194, 206
 McDowell, Miss Sophonisba B., 206
 McFarland, Mr., 266
 McFarland, Rev. Dr., 337, 339
 McGuire, Dr. Hunter, 335, 345,
 365
 McKenzie, Captain, 110
 McKinley, Colonel, 78
 Mecklenburg County, N. C., 256
 Mer de Glace, 248
 Mexicalcingo, 97, 98, 121
 Mexican Guerillas, 94
 Mexican manufacture, 166
 Mexicans, 84, 87, 89, 90, 95, 98-9,
 100-3, 105-6, 108-9, 111-13,
 119, 121, 124, 128, 138, 325
 Mexican War, 78, 120, 167, 365
 Mexico City, 79, 86, 90-4, 97, 102,
 104-6, 112-13, 119, 124, 128,
 130, 133-4, 136-40, 166, 176
 Mexico, 74, 76, 78, 81, 83-5, 87-9,
 94, 113, 117, 122, 126, 129, 132,
 135-6, 138, 173, 176, 199, 216,
 311, 313, 315, 318, 325, 342
 Milan, 248
 Mineral Wells, 188
 Mississippi River, 34, 79, 231
 Mississippi, State, 73
 Missouri, State, 182, 229, 231, 244
 Modena, 248
 Molino del Rey, 105-6, 113
 "Monongahela of Old," 48

- Monterey, 82-3, 88
 Montreal, 161, 207
 Moors, 253
 Moore, Hon. Samuel McDowell, 293
 Moorefield, 39
 Morrison, Dr., 355
 Morrison, Miss Laura, 275
 Morrison, Miss Mary Anna, later wife of General T. J. Jackson, 255
 Morrison, Mary Graham, 261-2
 Morrison, Captain Joseph, 345, 351
 Morrison, Rev. Dr. R. H., 256
 Morrison, Mrs. R. H., 261
 Morrison, Miss Sue, 294
 Morrison, William, 295
 Mount Vernon, Ind., 220
 Murdoch's, Mr. John, daughters, 285-6

 NAPIER, 125
 Naples, 248-9
 Napoleon, Emperor, 115, 248, 344
 Nassau, 170
National Intelligencer, 159
 National Military School of Mexico, 105
 National Palace, 124, 128
 Natural Bridge, 141
 Natural and Experimental Philosophy and Artillery, Chair of, 174
 Neale, Alfred, 27, 32, 34, 210, 221, 224-5, 228, 230, 231, 233, 238, 252
 Neale, Mrs. Alfred, 46, 210, 234-6, 238, 252, 277
 Neale ancestry, 46
 Neale, Charles, 234
 Neale, Daniel, 45-6
 Neale, George, uncle of Mrs. Jonathan Jackson, 46
 Neale, Hardin, 236, 238
 Neale, James, uncle of Mrs. Jonathan Jackson, 46
 Neale, Julia, 234
 Neale, Julia Beckwith (Mrs. Jonathan Jackson, and mother of General T. J. Jackson), 46
 Neale, Margaret Wynne (maternal grandmother of General T. J. Jackson), 46
 Neale, Minor, 181, 185
 Neale, Mrs. Minor, 210
 Neale, Richard, 46
 Neale, Richard, uncle of Mrs. Jonathan Jackson, 46
 Neale, Richard, 129
 Neale's Island, 228
 Neale, Thomas, Postmaster General of Virginia, 46
 Neale, Thomas, maternal grandfather of General T. J. Jackson, 25, 46-7, 50
 Neale, Thornton, 210
 Neale, William, uncle of Mrs. Jonathan Jackson, 46
 Neale, William (of Missouri), 231-3, 235
 New Jersey, 43
 New Orleans, 79, 80, 140, 199, 236
 New York, 39, 88, 140, 142, 144, 147, 149-50, 164, 174, 199, 201, 235-6, 244, 246-7, 249, 250, 262, 264, 265, 280, 282, 286-7, 290, 301
 Ney, Marshal, 115
 Niagara Falls, 164, 206-7, 256
 Norris, Miss Eliza, 227, 252
 Northampton, 284-5
 North Carolina, 252, 255-6, 260, 294
 Northcliffe, Lord, 343
 Northern people, 294
 Northumberland County, Va., 45
 Northwestern Virginia, 334

 OFFICIAL REPORTS, 115-16
 Ohio Legislature, 41
 Ohio River, 32, 41, 79, 228-9, 255
 Ohio, State Senate, 41
 Orizaba, 92, 133, 315
 Oswego, 164

 PALO ALTO, 95
 Paris, 134, 147, 150, 249
 Parkersburg, 27-8, 31, 46, 143, 181, 188, 228-9

Paseo, 135-6
 Patterson, R. (General, U. S. A.), 139
 Paxton, General (C. S. A.), 354
 Payne, Miss Mary (Mrs. John G. Jackson), 42
 "Peach Orchard" Farm, 47
 Peaks of Otter, 269
 Pearson, Joseph (M. C.), 42

 PEDREGAL, 98-9, 100, 121
 Pender, General (C. S. A.), 345-6
 Pendleton, Colonel, 350, 358
 Pendleton County, (W.) Va., 39
 Pennsylvania, 79, 212, 363
 Perote, 87, 90, 134
 Petersburg, 235
 Philadelphia, 41, 205, 212, 220, 224, 242-3, 256, 265, 286, 290
 Pickett, Geo. E. (General, C. S. A.), 61, 122, 360
 Pierce, Franklin (General, U. S. A.), President, 94, 97, 102
 Pillow, Gideon J., General, 87, 96, 99, 100, 102, 106, 110, 114-17, 130, 137, 138
 Pioneers, 49
 Pisa, 248
 Pittsburgh, 80, 142, 363
 Plattsburg Barracks, 161
 Point Isabel, 79
 Point Pleasant, 181, 192, 194, 229
 Pope, John (General, U. S. A.), 122
 Popocatepetl, 138
 Porter, F. (General, U. S. A.), 122
 Porter, E., 185
 President James Buchanan, 302
 President, C. S. A., and Cabinet, 360
 President of Mexico, 92
 Preston, Colonel J. T. L., 273, 279, 288, 331, 335, 339
 Preston, Mrs. Margaret Junkin, 204, 242, 315, 318, 331, 336-9, 362
 Preston, Rev. Dr. Thomas L., 288-91, 296, 308
 Preston, Willie, 335-6
 Protestants, 128
 Protestant families, 40

QUEBEC, 161
 Queretaro, 137
 Quitman, General (U. S. A.), 106, 110

 RAMSAY, Rev. Dr., 362
 Randolph Academy, 26
 Randolph County, (W.) Va., 26, 43, 45, 47, 65
 Randolph County Court, 50
 Randolph, William, 217
 Ransom, Colonel, 101
 Religious Sentiment, 47
 Reno, Jesse L. (General, U. S. A.), 61, 122
 Resaca de la Palma, 95
 Revolver, primitive, 113
 Richmond, 45, 80, 144, 172, 215-16, 235, 250, 256, 277, 293-5, 329, 331, 344, 357, 360, 363
 Richmond Medical Journal, 345
 Ridgely, Captain, 85
 Ringold, Captain, 85
 Rio Frio Mountains, 97
 Rio Grande River, 81-2
 Rio, Martinez del, 136
 River Rhine, 248
 Roaring Creek, 44
 Roberts, Lord, 343-4
 Robinson (Uncle Jack and Aunt Nancy), slaves owned by Cummins E. Jackson, 162
 Rockbridge Alum Springs, 179, 186-9, 203, 256
 Rockbridge Bank, 337
 Rockbridge County, Va., 329
 Rodes, General (C. S. A.), 354
 Rollins' Ancient History, 147, 221
 Rome, 249
 Rosecrans, W. S. (General, U. S. A.), 122
 Rowton Moor, 251
 Rumbough, P. C. (Major, C. S. A.), 324

 SABBATH, violation of, 48
 Sacramento, 158
 Saltillo, 82-4, 88
 San Antonio, 102, 121
 San Augustin, 98, 101, 121

- San Cosme Gate, 109-10, 112, 114, 122
 San Juan Dullas, Castle of, 84
 San Luis Potosi, 90
 San Pablo, 102
 Santa Anna, General, 86, 88-9, 92, 94, 97-8, 102, 104, 111, 112, 121, 132, 138
 Saratoga, 256
 Schoonmaker, Colonel J. M., 363-4
 Scott, General Winfield, 69, 72, 82, 86, 89, 91-4, 96-102, 104-5, 111, 115, 119, 122, 128, 137, 173, 216, 313
 Secession, 291-2
 Secretary of War, 142
 Secretary of War, C. S. A., 329
 Seely, a slave, 64
 Semmes, Colonel Thomas M., 317-18
 Sevier, Mr., 137
 Shields, General, 87, 101-2, 122
 Slaves, 29, 55, 64, 162, 176, 274, 294, 336-9
 Smith, Captain, 85
 Smith, Colonel Augustus, 244
 Smith, Dr., 357
 Smith, General Francis H., 75, 171, 178, 239, 247, 316
 Smith, Gustavus W. (General, C. S. A.), 97, 101, 122, 173, 329
 Smith, Captain James P., 345, 347, 351-2, 355
 Smith, General Percifer F., 124, 131
 Smith, General W. D., 61
 Spanish language, 92, 125, 133, 136-7, 268-9
 St. Lawrence River, 207
 Staunton, 141, 158, 183, 185-6, 227, 257
 Steamer *Asia*, 246
 Stoneman (General, U. S. A.), 61
 "Stonewall Brigade," 352, 360
 "Stonewall," soubriquet, 111, 352
 Stringer, John, 171
 Stringer, William, 37
 Stuart, J. E. B. (General, C. S. A.), 350-1
 Sumwalt, Colonel Charles S. K. (U. S. A.), 364
 Switzerland, 248
 TAYLOR, CAPTAIN FRANCIS, 80, 90-1, 124, 127, 131, 141-2
 Taylor, General Zacharia, 80-2, 84, 90, 95
 Texas, 74, 135
 Thomas, Rev. Enoch, 233, 260, 264-5, 301-2, 307
 Thompson, Judge, 290
 Treaty of Peace between United States and Mexico, 128
 Trousdale, Colonel, 106, 115-16, 118
 Tucker, Dr., 357
 Tucker, Hon. J. Randolph, 217
 Turkey Island, Virginia, 217
 Turkey Run, 40
 Twiggs, General, 85-6, 89, 90, 96, 98, 101-2, 106, 110
 Tygarts Valley, 43, 289
 Tygarts Valley River, 144-5
 "UNCLE ROBINSON," a slave, 28
 Union, 290, 292-4, 313
 United States, 89, 91, 129, 132, 135, 138, 149, 247
 United States Army, 216
 University of Cambridge, 249
 University of Virginia, 214-16
 Upshur County, (W.) Va., 26-7
 VALENCIA, GENERAL, 99, 138
 Valley of Virginia, 80, 317, 328-9, 361, 363-4
 Veach, Hon. James, 48
 Venice, 248
 Vera Cruz, 82-4, 86, 88, 90, 114, 120, 129, 133-4, 140
 Vesuvius, 248
 Vicksburg, 181, 185
 Vinton, Captain, 85
 Virginia, 73, 123, 141, 144, 164, 171, 217, 270, 293-4, 332-3, 357
 Virginia Convention, 46, 77, 171-2, 293
 Virginia, Governor of, 43, 295, 360

- Virginia Legislature, 41, 43, 45,
144, 187
Virginia Military Institute, 171,
173, 176-8, 186, 189-90, 193,
202, 206, 209, 214-15, 217, 228-
9, 249, 255, 270-2, 283, 292-3,
295, 304
Virginia Militia, 42
Virginia Mineral Springs, 141, 177
Virginia Volunteers, 333
- WARM SPRINGS, VA., 179
Warren District, 35
War, Revolutionary, 41, 46
Washington College, Va., 204, 306
Washington, D. C., 53, 132, 137,
164, 197, 243-4, 295, 317
Washington, George W., President,
41-2, 295
Washington, Mrs. George Steptoe,
42
Waterloo, 248-9
Watkins, Dr., 274
Watts, Mr., 217
Webster, Daniel, 160
Webster Station, 283
Welch, 303
Western Virginia, 174
West Fork River, 66
Westmoreland County, Va., 46
Weston, (W.) Va., 27, 37-8, 52,
60, 73, 188, 279
West Point, 32, 52-3, 59, 61-2, 66-
72, 74-6, 78, 120, 122-3, 125,
164, 172, 205, 278, 311
Wheeling, 173
White, Dr. George, 211
White, George (uncle by marriage
of General T. J. Jackson), 32,
211
White, John, 183, 236, 238, 240
White, John (uncle by marriage of
General T. J. Jackson), 36-7,
154, 162, 181, 211
White, Mrs. Catharine, "Aunt
Katy," wife of Mr. John White,
162
White, Mrs. Margaret Hadden,
148, 172, 183, 276, 290
White, Rev. Dr., 314, 337, 339-40,
361-2
White Sulphur Springs, 141, 273
White, Sylvanus, 25, 36, 52, 57,
65, 78-9, 109, 176, 182, 198
Whiting, General, 80
Wilcox, General, 61
Wild animals, 44
Wilderness Tavern, 348
Williamsport, 333
Williams, Mrs. Catharine (a rela-
tive of General T. J. Jackson),
38, 234
Willis, Colonel, 354
Wilson, John, 43
Withers, Dr., 73
Withers Ford, 66
Withers, John, 73
Wood County, (W.) Va., 46-7
Woodson, Mrs. Blake B. (mother
of General T. J. Jackson by
former marriage), 27, 230, 239-
40
Woodson, Captain Blake B., 27
Woodson, Wirt (half-brother of
General T. J. Jackson), 34, 92,
129, 210, 220-5, 229-33, 235-6,
238-9, 242, 244, 250, 252, 255,
258, 261-2, 264
Worth, General, 85, 87, 90, 92, 96,
99, 106-7, 110, 116, 118, 130,
137
Wren's Cavalry, 360
Wynne, Margaret, 46
- YORK, ENGLAND, 248-9, 303
- ZANESVILLE, 41

PROBLEMS OF WAR AND PEACE

EDWARD A. STEINER

Nationalizing America

12mo, cloth, net \$1.00.

How to set in order our national house, so as best to face the international crisis at the close of the Great War, how to secure better unity, solidarity and genuine nationalization, are some of the problems to which Professor Steiner addresses himself. It is a book of rare quality written by a man who thinks and feels deeply and who has a fiery patriotism for the land of his adoption.

The Confession of a Hyphenated American

12mo, net 50c.

"There is a wholesome ring to the book, containing many wholesome suggestions for those who are coming to this land to make it their future home."—*Herald and Presbyterian*.

"A small book, but it is full of meat. It ought to exert a powerful influence among naturalized Americans, but there are also many things in it which native Americans would do well to read and ponder."—*Albany Argus*.

WILLIAM I. HULL, Ph.D. *Professor of History and International Relations in Swarthmore College*

Preparedness ; The American versus Military Programme

12mo, cloth, net \$1.25.

Dr. Chas. F. Jefferson says: "Prof. Hull has done a distinct service by presenting the case against enlarged military preparedness at the present time. I wish that his words might be read by millions of our people."

Hamilton Holt, Editor of *The Independent* says: "A veritable arsenal of facts and arguments for all those who know this side of the greatest issue now before the American people."

CHARLES E. JEFFERSON, D.D. *Broadway Tabernacle
New York*

What the War Is Teaching

Merrick Lectures for 1916 Ohio Wesleyan University. 12mo, cloth, net \$1.00.

In five brilliant discourses, Dr. Jefferson gathers up some of the lessons of the European struggle. Until war is bitterly hated, it can never be abolished. Europe has never really hated war, Dr. Jefferson contends; that is why she is in the trenches to-day. What she needs—what the whole world needs—is to be made literally sick by its horrifying spectacle. This, among other things the Great War is surely doing. Titles of lectures are as follows: I. What War Is. II. What Is In Man. III. The Inexorableness of Law. IV. What Armed Peace Leads to. V. The Indispensableness of Religion.

PROBLEMS OF WAR AND PEACE, Etc.

FREDERICK LYNCH, D.D.

Secretary Church Peace Union

The Last War

A Study of Things Present and Things to Come.
12mo, cloth, net 75c.

"A passionate and intelligent plea for world peace. It is sane, thoughtful, well balanced and convincing. Shows that the Christian churches have a duty to perform at this crisis in the world's history."—*Watchman-Examiner*.

PETER AINSLIE, D.D.

Christ or Napoleon--Which?

A Study of the Cure for World's Militarism and the Church's Scandal of Division. 12mo, cloth, net 50c.

"A searching and powerful answer to this question. It shows how that divided Christianity is a failure and how even the church itself is penetrated by the roots of this military spirit. Mr. Ainslie is always a pleasing and interesting writer and he has fully met every expectation in this book. It will do you good to read his splendid message."—*Louisville Herald*.

SIDNEY L. GULICK, D.D.

The Fight for Peace

12mo, paper, net 30c; cloth, net 50c.

"A valuable and comprehensive text-book on the subject of securing world peace by means of the advocacy of Christian principles by the churches. Many facts are given. Correct principles are stated. Earnest appeals are made. A well-written little volume."—*Herald and Presbyterian*.

NEWELL DWIGHT HILLIS, D.D.

Studies of the Great War

What Each Nation Has at Stake. Cloth, \$1.20 net.

"Dr. Hillis' volume will rank at once with the best of those already available from his pen. He would not have Germany crushed; he would have it simply restrained to its proper field of development. So with the other nations. It would be hard to find a more complete summation of the facts of the history, progress and present position of all the nations involved than in this volume."—*The Continent*.

PROF. FRANKLIN HENRY GIDDINGS

The Western Hemisphere in the World of To-morrow

12mo, boards, net 35c.

The professor of Sociology and History of Civilization in Columbia University, addresses himself to the problem of the future as it specifically relates to America. He examines her traditions, heritage, ideals and program, and proceeds to outline her possible place and influence in the reconstructed world of to-morrow.

QUESTIONS OF THE DAY

FREDERICK W. PEABODY

The Religio-Medical Masquerade

New Edition. 12mo, cloth, net \$1.00.

Ten years of critical investigation of Christian Science, repeatedly with the aid of legal process in important litigations in which Mrs. Eddy was a party and he examined under oath many of her closest adherents, have qualified Mr. Peabody, above all others, to give a truthful representation of the character of the movement and its leaders. He was the Massachusetts lawyer for Mrs. Eddy's sons in their protracted litigation.

I. M. HALDEMAN, D.D.

Christian Science in the Light of Holy Scripture

New Revised Edition. 12mo, cloth, net \$1.00.

"Dr. Haldeman brings every question he considers to the bar of that highest tribunal, and tests it in the full light of the divine revelation. All the resources of his intimate knowledge of the Bible and of his powers of keen insight and effective presentation are drawn upon. He has so well succeeded that we do not see what more can be said. The proof is absolute; it is clearly stated; it is exhaustive."—*Examiner*.

J. A. PHILLIPS

Missionary of the Methodist Episcopal Church South in Mexico

Roman Catholicism Analyzed

A Dispassionate Examination of Romish Claims. With Foreword by Bishop Burt. 8vo, net \$1.50.

"A dispassionate examination to the claims and doctrines of the Roman Catholic Church. The arguments are clear and conclusive. The logic is masterful, incisive, merciless and based upon undisputed facts. The style is clear, lucid and fascinating. It is an arsenal of anti-Catholic facts."—*Lookout*.

WILLIAM PARKER

The Fundamental Error of Woman Suffrage

12mo, cloth, net 50c.

Most of the arguments advanced against Woman Suffrage are purely economic. The author of this volume adopts another course, declaring the fundamental error to lie in the realm of morals. From this viewpoint he discusses his subject in its moral relation to the chief phases of modern life—marriage, home, religion, social intercourse, civic and political activities, and so forth.

W. HALL CALVERT, M.D.

The Further Evolution of Man

12mo, cloth, net \$1.00.

A vigorous counterblast to the Darwinian theories of Natural Selection and the Survival of the Fittest. The constructive aim of the volume is to prove that social amelioration is a necessity of the spiritual evolution now in process in our Western civilization.

PROBLEMS OF WAR AND PEACE, Etc.

ANNA FITZ GERALD VAN LOAN

The Power to Right Our Wrongs

Evidence from Facts that Christian Principles are Best Aiding Humanity. 12mo, cloth, net \$1.00.

"This book demonstrates, from carefully taken premises, that the principles which now control and maintain peace in civic and national affairs could, and should, be applied to avert international conflict, thereby furnishing a practical method of ushering in an era of world-wide peace."

GAIUS GLENN ATKINS, D.D.

The Maze of the Nations and the Way Out

The Prize Essay in the One Thousand Dollar competition promoted by the Carnegie Church Peace Union. 12mo, cloth, net 75c.

Dr. Atkins' main contention is that the only way to insure a lasting peace among the nations of the earth, is by eliminating the causes of war. A thoughtful, ably-written essay, containing suggestions for the pacification of the world, of real and practical value.

THOMAS CAPEK (Editor)

Bohemia Under Hapsburg Misrule

A Study of the Ideals and Aspirations of the Bohemian and Slovak Peoples as Related to and Affected by the European War. 12mo, cloth, net \$1.00.

"The whole forms a fairly complete survey of the character, achievements, and aspirations of Bohemians, past and present."—*N. Y. Times*.

HENRY D. ESTABROOK

The Vengeance of the Flag

And Other Occasional Addresses. 8vo, net \$2.00.

"This man Estabrook—he is a surprier. Takes a man's breath away to read his speeches. A man can't let go when he has once laid hold. It's like grasping the poles of a battery."—*Omaha Mercury*.

COMPARATIVE RELIGIONS

SAMUEL G. WILSON, A.M., D.D.

Bahaism and Its Claims

A Study of the Religions Promulgated by Baha Ullah and Abdul Baha. 8vo, cloth, net \$1.50.

Bahaism is a revolt from the fold of Islam which in recent years has been bidding vigorously for the support of Occidental minds. Many of its principles are culled from the Christian religion which it insidiously seeks to supplant. What this Oriental cult is, what it stands for, and what it aims at, is told in a volume which forms a notable addition to the History of Comparative Religions.

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY



106 490

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY